





Class PC 2109

Book .C64  
1860











PROGRESSIVE

# FRENCH GRAMMAR

AND EXERCISES,

ON THE BASIS OF

LEVIZAC'S FRENCH GRAMMAR:

AND FURTHER COMPRISING,

ON A PLAN ENTIRELY ORIGINAL,

I. A Table of all the Irregular and Defective Verbs in the French Language, conjugated in such Tenses as are liable to Irregularities. And,

II. A Terminational Vocabulary, comprised in Twelve Pages, whereby the Gender of every Noun may be promptly and certainly determined.

BY A. G. COLLOT,

PROFESSOR OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD, ENGLAND;

AUTHOR OF THE "PROGRESSIVE FRENCH SCHOOL SERIES;" AND LATE

TEACHER OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE IN PHILADELPHIA.

PHILADELPHIA:

S. C. HAYES, 439 MARKET STREET.

T. ELLWOOD ZELL, PUBLISHER.

1860.

la tête, l'incubation, et  
s'installement, cette  
Chambre!

PC 2109

C 64  
1860

Ἡ μὲν ῥίζα τῆς παιδείας πικρά,  
οἱ δὲ κῆποι γλυκεῖς.—ARISTOTLE

F. 3

By transfer

MAY 26 1916

Entered according to the act of Congress, in the year 1844, by James  
Kay, Jun. & Brother, in the office of the clerk of the District Court of the  
United States in and for the Eastern District of Pennsylvania.



## PREFACE.

THE Author, in the preparation of this volume, owes much to Levizac's French Grammar, which he has assumed as its basis. The work of M. Levizac is characterized by so many excellencies, that it is much to be regretted that it has faults which materially detract from its usefulness. It is arranged with little regard to order, is extremely diffuse, and contains much matter which is either entirely out of place in a Grammar, or too philosophical for the tender mind of the youthful scholar. Besides which, it has treated the two most important objects of a French Grammar, viz. the Genders of Nouns, and the Verbs, the former superficially and unsatisfactorily, and the latter in a manner perplexing, and even erroneous.

The Author has endeavoured to give proper arrangement to the valuable materials in Levizac's Grammar: he has omitted such portions of it as he deemed irrelevant, or above the comprehension of learners—at the same time that he has retained every thing of practical value; and has introduced such improvements and corrections as were required by the decisions of the best modern authorities. He claims as his own exclusively, the Terminational Vocabulary of Genders; the Table of the Irregular and Defective Verbs; and large additions to and improvements in the Exercises.

The object of the TERMINATIONAL VOCABULARY OF GENDERS is to enable the scholar, by a method certain and rapid, to fix permanently in the memory, the Genders of the French Nouns; without a good knowledge of which, it is impossible to speak or write the French language with propriety. In the English language there are three genders,—which are called masculine, feminine

and neuter : under the first are classed all males, under the second all females, and under the third all inanimate things. The French have but two genders : the masculine and the feminine. It is as easy in French as in English to class the males and the females ; but when the pupil comes to inanimate things, a difficulty of great importance meets him. As the French have no neuter gender, they are obliged to make what would be neuter in English either masculine or feminine. A child learning French can see no reason why a *chair* or a *table* should be called feminine, or why a *hinge* or a *nail* should be termed masculine ; and yet they are so.

Many attempts have been made to furnish a system of rules to determine, either by *signification*, or by *termination*, the genders of inanimate objects in French. But so perplexing and impracticable have they been found, that many eminent writers and teachers (among whom may be mentioned Boyer, the author of the French Dictionary, and the celebrated Cobbett, the author of the French Grammar) have recommended students, as the only method of acquiring an adequate knowledge of the Genders of French Nouns, to go completely through the French dictionary, and copy out all the nouns, affixing the gender to each. An Herculean labour !

The author coincides in opinion with these eminent men, as to the entire insufficiency of every system of rules hitherto devised for acquiring a knowledge of the Genders ; but he has not deemed it possible that any pupil could spare the time to travel over so immense a volume as the French Dictionary, in pursuit of that knowledge. The author has therefore done it for him. He has prepared, from actual examination of the dictionary, an Alphabetical Vocabulary of all the Masculine and Feminine Terminations in the French language ; and has placed in one Table all the Masculine, and in another all the Feminine Terminations, with the Exceptions in juxtaposition. The whole is comprised in the short space of twelve pages ; and by far the greater portion of the Terminations have none, or at most but two Exceptions. The Student has therefore presented to him, in small compass, a mass

of knowledge which is entirely within the reach of a mind of the most ordinary ability ; and he will be inexcusable, should he fail to avail himself of it.

The TABLE OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS is comprised in two Sub-Tables. The first contains a model of every variety of Irregular or Defective verb, conjugated in all the tenses which are liable to irregularities, and so arranged that the eye takes in each Verb at a glance. The second comprises all the remaining Irregular and Defective Verbs in the French language, with the name of the model verb of each, and the page at which that model will be found in the preceding sub-table.

M. Levizac has divided the verbs of the second conjugation into four, and those of the fourth conjugation into five branches, and, considering them all as regular, has given a model verb for each—whereby the one conjugation has four, and the other five model verbs. This arrangement has been found most perplexing to the young student ; and even to grown persons of sound judgment. The Author's plan has been to give only one verb as a model, in each of these conjugations ; and he has considered as irregular all those verbs which do not conform to the model, and has accordingly placed them in the table of Irregular and Defective Verbs. The Author believes that those engaged in tuition will best understand the value of this arrangement ; and he flatters himself that the simplicity, perspicuity and conciseness of his table of the Irregular and Defective Verbs will not pass unnoticed.

The Author avails himself of the opportunity here afforded him of urging on teachers to accustom their pupils to conjugate the verbs from the *primitive* tenses. These are but five in number ; and as every other tense of the verb is derived from one of these, it is evident that *five words* will lead to the conjugation of the whole verb. This method, which is strictly inductive, will enable the pupil, from infallible premises, to guide himself through the intricacies of the French verb, a thorough knowledge of which, in the language of a popular writer, is one-third of the acquisition of the language

The EXERCISES have been made very copious; and exemplify, in a progressive order of difficulty, all the niceties of the French language. In many instances in these Exercises, the English and French might have been made to conform more literally to each other; but it was deemed of importance to preserve the peculiarities of each language, so that the scholar, by comparing them, might acquire a practical familiarity with French idiomatic expressions, and also learn how to express those of his own language in correct French.\* Throughout the Exercises in the First Part, the genders of new nouns have been marked; but in those of the Second Part, which treats of Syntax, the pupil is expected to ascertain the Genders by the Terminational Vocabulary already spoken of.

Great pains have been taken to render this Grammar lucid in its typographical arrangements. In the table of the Irregular and Defective Verbs, the advantages which have been derived from attention to this particular will be apparent at a glance. The conjugations of the regular verbs have been printed in a compact manner, in order that the learner might embrace each at one view. The simple tenses have been placed in the left, and their respective compound tenses in the right column, immediately opposite to them; and each person of a tense occupies but one line of a column. While, in other editions of Levizac, the affirmative form of the verb *avoir* occupies seven pages; the *four* forms of the same verb are given in this Grammar in four pages and a half. In the exercises, the lines are placed at proper distances apart; the words are separated from each other by a greater space than ordinary; and each English word or phrase is placed precisely above its corresponding French. All the Rules in the Grammar have been numbered; and advantage has been

\* In the Author's "PROGRESSIVE INTERLINEAR FRENCH READER," which is to be studied simultaneously with this Grammar, the Pupil is made familiar not only with the meaning of each idiomatic expression that occurs, but also of each word of which it consists, and thus obtains information which will afford him much assistance in his preparation of these exercises.



taken of this facility of reference, in the Exercises in the Second Part, to require the pupil to make his own application of each Rule, instead of applying it for him.

Such explanations and instructions as are necessary for the use of the Grammar, have been given in Notes at the places where they are required.

For the use of Teachers, Parents, and those who may be studying French without Instructor, the author has prepared a **KEY TO THE EXERCISES IN THIS GRAMMAR**, which may be obtained from the Publishers of the Grammar, or other Booksellers.

This Grammar and the Key terminate the Author's Series of Elementary French School Books. The whole, in Six Volumes, furnish a complete course of study of the French, both as a written and spoken language; and are believed to point out the means, by the shortest routes, whereby the Student may attain the object he has in view—the speedy and thorough acquisition of the elegant and useful accomplishments of speaking, reading and writing the French language. For an account of them, the reader is referred to the advertisement in front of this Grammar.

This work has now assumed its permanent form; and will not henceforth be subjected to alterations of any description.

# CONTENTS.

---

INTRODUCTION : being a Brief Explanation of the Parts of Speech.....	15
---	----

## FRENCH GRAMMAR.

FRENCH ALPHABET, with the Old and New Pronun- ciation.....	24
FRENCH SOUNDS .....	25
The Vowel Sounds .....	25
The Diphthongs.....	26
The Consonants .....	26
ACCENTUATION AND PUNCTUATION .....	29
GENDERS OF FRENCH NOUNS.....	30
GENDERS BY SIGNIFICATION .....	30
Masculine by Signification.....	31
Feminine by Signification .....	31
GENDERS BY TERMINATION .....	31
Terminational Vocabulary.....	82
Table of Masculine Terminations.....	32
Table of Feminine Terminations .....	40
LIST OF ALL THE NOUNS WHICH ARE MASCULINE IN ONE SIGNIFICATION AND FEMININE IN ANOTHER .....	45
INTRODUCTION TO THE EXERCISES.....	47
Of the Article .....	47
Of the Article, and the Prepositions <i>à</i> and <i>de</i> .....	48
Of <i>à</i> and <i>de</i> , and the Demonstrative Adjective .....	49
Of Elision .....	50
Of the Words which are spelled alike in both Languages, or which differ only in their Terminations.....	51

## PART I.

### THE PARTS OF SPEECH.

#### CHAPTER I.

OF THE SUBSTANTIVE, OR NOUN .....	53
-----------------------------------	----

#### CHAPTER II.

OF THE ARTICLE .....	55
----------------------	----

#### CHAPTER III.

OF THE ADJECTIVE .....	57
Of the qualificative Adjective .....	58
Of the Formation of the Feminine .....	61
List of Adjectives with Irregular Feminines .....	63
Of the Formation of the Plural .....	65
Of the Determinative Adjective .....	66
Agreement of the Adjective with the Substantive .....	69
Numbers: Cardinal, Ordinal, Collective, Adverbial, Distribu- tive and Proportional .....	70

#### CHAPTER IV.

OF THE PRONOUN .....	72
Section I.—Of the Personal Pronouns .....	72
Section II.—Of the Possessive Pronouns .....	75
Section III.—Of the Relative Pronouns .....	76
Section IV.—Of the Absolute Pronouns .....	78
Section V.—Of the Demonstrative Pronouns .....	79
Section VI.—Of the Indefinite Pronouns .....	81

#### CHAPTER V.

OF THE VERB .....	82
OF CONJUGATIONS .....	83
Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb <i>Avoir</i> .....	84
1. Affirmative Form .....	84
2. Negative Form .....	85
3. Interrogative Form .....	87
4. Negative-and-Interrogative Form .....	88

Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb <i>Etre</i> .....	90
First Conjugation—in <i>ER</i> .....	93
Observations on Verbs of the First Conjugation.....	95
Second Conjugation—in <i>IR</i> .....	97
Observations on Verbs of the Second Conjugation.....	98
Third Conjugation—in <i>OIR</i> .....	100
Remarks on the Third Conjugation .....	101
Fourth Conjugation—in <i>RE</i> .....	102
<b>OF THE NEUTER VERBS</b> .....	105
<b>OF THE PRONOMINAL VERBS</b> .....	106
Conjugation of the Pronominal Verb <i>Se Lever</i> .....	107
1. Affirmative Form .....	107
2. Negative Form .....	109
3. Interrogative Form .....	109
4. Negative-and-Interrogative Form .....	109
<b>OF THE PASSIVE VERBS</b> .....	111
<b>OF THE IMPERSONAL VERBS</b> .....	111
Conjugation of the Impersonal Verb <i>Neiger</i> .....	112
Conjugation of the Impersonal Verb <i>Y Avoir</i> .....	113
<b>OF THE FORMATION OF TENSES</b> .....	115
Table of the Termination of the Simple Tenses of the Four Conjugations.....	116
<b>OF THE IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS</b> .....	117
Table of the Irregular and Defective Verbs—arranged ac- cording to their respective Conjugations .....	121
List of all the Irregular and Defective Verbs in the French Language not contained in the foregoing Table—ar- ranged according to their respective Conjugations....	133

## CHAPTER VI.

<b>OF THE PARTICIPLE</b> .....	149
Of the Participle Present.....	149
Of the Participle Past.....	151
Of the Participle Past accompanied by the verb <i>Etre</i> .....	152

Of the Participle Past accompanied by the verb <i>Avoir</i> , and followed or preceded by its Object Direct, or Indirect. . . . .	153
Of the Participle Past of Impersonal Verbs . . . . .	154
Of the Participle Past of Pronominal Verbs . . . . .	154

## CHAPTER VII.

OF THE ADVERB . . . . .	155
-------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER VIII.

OF THE PREPOSITION . . . . .	158
Of Prepositions of the First Class . . . . .	159
Of Prepositions of the Second Class . . . . .	160
Of Prepositions of the Third Class . . . . .	160

## CHAPTER IX.

OF THE CONJUNCTION . . . . .	161
Of Conjunctions of the First Class . . . . .	161
Of Conjunctions of the Second Class . . . . .	162
Of Conjunctions of the Third Class . . . . .	163

## CHAPTER X.

OF THE INTERJECTION . . . . .	164
-------------------------------	-----

## PART II.

## SYNTAX.

## CHAPTER I.

OF THE SUBSTANTIVE . . . . .	165
------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER II.

OF THE ARTICLE . . . . .	167
--------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER III.

OF THE ADJECTIVE . . . . .	170
Of the Qualificative Adjective . . . . .	170
Of the Determinative Adjective . . . . .	173

## CHAPTER IV.

OF THE PRONOUN . . . . .	175
Section I.—Of the Personal Pronouns . . . . .	175
Section II.—Of the Possessive Pronouns . . . . .	180

Section III.—Of the Relative Pronouns .....	1
Section IV.—Of the Absolute Pronouns .....	1
Section V.—Of the Demonstrative Pronouns .....	1
Section VI.—Of the Indefinite Pronouns .....	1

## CHAPTER V.

OF THE VERB .....	188
Agreement of the Verb with the Subject .....	188
Regimen of Verbs .....	190
Use of Moods and Tenses .....	193
Of the Indicative and its Tenses .....	193
Of the Conditional, and its Tenses .....	195
Of the Imperative .....	195
Of the Subjunctive, and its Tenses .....	195
Of the Infinitive .....	197

## CHAPTER VI.

OF THE PARTICIPLE .....	201
-------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER VII.

OF THE ADVERB .....	203
---------------------	-----

## CHAPTER VIII.

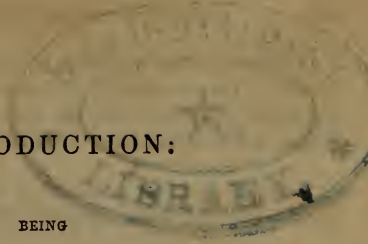
OF THE PREPOSITION .....	205
--------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER IX.

OF THE CONJUNCTION <i>Que</i> .....	205
-------------------------------------	-----

## PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES.

THE DEATH OF ADRASTUS .....	<i>Fénelon</i> 206
THE QUESTIONS LEFT BY MINOS .....	<i>Fénelon</i> 210
THE TRANSMIGRATIONS OF INDUR .....	<i>Barbault</i> 214



# INTRODUCTION:

BEING

## A BRIEF EXPLANATION OF THE PARTS OF SPEECH.

WORDS are articulate sounds, which we make use of to express our ideas. There are, in French, ten kinds of words: namely, the Substantive or Noun, the Article, the Adjective, the Pronoun, the Verb, the Participle, the Adverb, the Preposition, the Conjunction, and the Interjection.

Words, considered as sounds, are formed by Letters and Syllables.

Letters are divided into Vowels and Consonants. The Vowels are; *a, e, i, o, u, y*: the Consonants are; *b, c, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, x, z*.

A Vowel is an articulate sound, that can be perfectly uttered without the help of any other sound.

A Consonant is an articulate sound, which cannot be perfectly uttered without the help of a Vowel.

A Syllable is a sound, either simple or compound, pronounced by a single impulse of the voice, and constituting a Word, or part of a Word: as, *an*, year; *un*, one; *a-mi* friend.

A Diphthong is a coalition of two sounds, which are uttered by a single impulse of the voice: as, *bien*, well; *oui*, yes.



A word of One Syllable is termed a Monosyllable; a word of Two Syllables, a Dissyllable; a word of Three Syllables, a Trisyllable; and a word of Four or more Syllables, a Polysyllable.

A Sentence is an assemblage of Words, forming complete sense: as, *Dieu est juste*, God is just.

Sentences are of two kinds: Simple, and Compound.

A Simple Sentence has in it but one subject, one verb, and one object or attribute: as, *la vie est courte*, life is short.

A Compound Sentence consists of two or more simple sentences connected together: as, *Dieu récompensera les bons, et punira les méchants*; God will reward the good, and punish the wicked.

The subject (nominative) is the thing or person chiefly spoken of; the verb expresses the action, affirmed or denied of it; and the object (accusative) is the thing or person affected by such action. Thus, in the following sentence, *Dieu punit les méchants*, God punishes the wicked — *God* is the subject; the action that proceeds from God is affirmed by the verb *punishes*; and the object upon which it falls is *the wicked*.

THE SUBSTANTIVE, OR NOUN. The Substantive is a word which represents a person or a thing that exists in nature; as, *homme*, man; *arbre*, tree; *livre*, book; or which has its existence in the mind; as, *vertu*, virtue; *espérance*, hope; *courage*, courage.

There are two kinds of Substantives: the Substantive Proper, or proper name; and the Substantive Common.

The proper name is that which is applied to a particular person or thing: as, *Annibal*, *Paris*.



The Substantive Common is that which belongs to a whole class of objects: as, *arbre*, tree.

NUMBER. There are two Numbers: the Singular, and the Plural.

The Singular expresses but one object: as, *une chaise*, a chair; *une table*, a table.

The Plural signifies more objects than one: as, *des chaises*, chairs; *des tables*, tables.

GENDER. There are only two Genders: the Masculine, and the Feminine.

The Masculine belongs to the male kind: as, *un homme*, a man; *un lion*, a lion.

The Feminine belongs to the female kind: as, *une femme*, a woman; *une lionne*, a lioness.

This distinction has, through imitation, been extended to all substantives: thus, *un livre*, a book, is masculine; *une chaise*, a chair, is feminine.

CASES. Cases express the different relations of one thing to another.

To express these different relations, the Greeks and Romans made use of different terminations of the substantive; such as, *ordo*, the order, *l'ordre*; *ordinis*, of the order, *de l'ordre*; *ordini*, to the order, *à l'ordre*, &c. The terminations thus varied are called *cases*; and all the nouns, which, in the variations of their cases, have the same ending, are called of the same declension.

The French, English, Italian, and other modern languages, do not admit of any variation in the terminations of their nouns; and, consequently, the nouns of these languages, having but one termination in the singular, and

another in the plural, are supplied with prepositions prefixed: as, *pierre*, stone; *de pierre*, of stone; *à la pierre*, to the stone; *en pierre*, in stone; *avec la pierre*, with the stone.

**THE ARTICLE.** The Article is a word prefixed to substantives, to determine the extent of their signification: as, *le soleil luit*, the sun shines.

The French article is *le*, for the masculine singular; *la*, for the feminine singular; and *les*, for the plural of both genders.

The article is subject to Elision and Contraction.

The Elision of the article, is the omitting of the *e* in *le*, and the *a* in *la*, when they precede a noun beginning with a vowel, or *h* mute: as, *l' argent*, the money; *l' histoire*, the history.

Contraction is the compression of two words into one. It takes place when the preposition *à*, or *de*, precedes the article, in the following cases: instead of putting *de le* before a masculine singular, beginning with a consonant, or *h* aspirated, *du* must be employed; instead of *à le*, *au* must be used; and before the plural of both genders, *de les* is changed into *des*, and *à les* into *aux*: as, *du roi*, of the king; *au roi*, to the king; *des rois*, of the kings; *aux rois*, to the kings.

**THE ADJECTIVE.** The Adjective is a word which expresses the quality of the substantive: as, *bon père*, good father; *bonne mère*, good mother.

In French, the adjective takes the gender and number of the substantive to which it relates.

**THE PRONOUN.** A Pronoun is a word used instead of a noun, to avoid the too frequent repetition of the noun:

as, *Pierre est sorti, il reviendra bientôt*; Peter is out, he will soon return.

There are several kinds of pronouns : as, the Personal, Possessive, Relative, Absolute, Demonstrative, and Indefinite.

THE VERB. The Verb expresses the action, or the state of the subject : as, *Dieu punira les méchants*, God will punish the wicked ; *ma sœur* repose, my sister *reposes*.

There are five kinds of Verbs : the Active, Passive, Neuter, Pronominal, and Impersonal.

The Verb Active expresses an action performed by the subject, and has a regimen direct : as, *j' aime mon père*, I love my father.

The Verb Passive expresses an action received by the subject : as, *mon père est aimé de moi*, my father is loved by me.

The Verb Neuter expresses also an action, but has no direct regimen : as, *je vais en Italie*, I am going to Italy.

The Pronominal Verb is that which is conjugated through all the tenses with two personal pronouns : as, *je me flatte*, I flatter myself.

The Impersonal Verb is used only in the third person singular : as, *il pleut*, it rains.

The Verb has Numbers, Persons, Tenses, and Moods.

There are two Numbers in Verbs ; the Singular, and Plural : as, *je chante*, I sing ; *nous chantons*, we sing.

There are three persons in each number. The first is the person who speaks : as, *je pense*, I think ; *nous pensons*, we think

The second is the person spoken to: as, *tu penses*, thou thinkest; *vous pensez*, you think.

The third is the person spoken of: as, *il* or *elle pense*, he or she thinks; *ils* or *elles pensent*, they think.

Tense is the distinction of time, and admits only of Three Parts: the Present, Past, and Future.

The Past, and Future, being composed of many different instants, admit of various degrees of anteriority and posteriority. The Present admits of no division.

The Present represents an action or event as passing at the time in which it is mentioned: as, *je vois*, I see; *il vient*, he comes.

The Present Tense likewise expresses a character or quality at present existing: as, *c' est un habile homme*, he is an able man; *c' est une femme aimable*, she is an amiable woman.

In animated *historical* narrations, this tense is sometimes substituted for the preterit: as, *il envahit le territoire des paisibles habitants, fait un immense butin, qu' il partage entre ses soldats, &c.*; he invades the territory of the peaceable inhabitants, takes immense booty, which he divides amongst his soldiers, &c.

There are Five Tenses to express the Past: the Imperfect, Preterit-definite, Preterit-indefinite, Preterit-anterior, and Pluperfect.

The Imperfect expresses a present, with respect to something past: as, *j' entraîs au moment où vous sortiez*, I came in at the moment you were going out. Or, it expresses something past, without fixing the time of its duration: as, *César était un habile général*, Cæsar was an able general.

The Preterit-definite marks that a thing took place at a time completely past: as, *j' écrivis hier à Rome*, I wrote yesterday to Rome.

The Preterit-indefinite expresses an action as having taken place at a time which is neither precise nor determinate: as, *il m' a fait un vrai plaisir en venant me voir*, he has given me real pleasure by coming to see me. Or, at a time which is not absolutely past: as, *j' ai écrit aujourd'hui*, I have written to-day.

The Preterit-anterior expresses an action as having taken place just before another, at a time which is past: as, *quand j' eus lu, je partis*; when I had read, I set out.

The Pluperfect expresses one action as having taken place at any period antecedent to another action equally past: as, *j' avais fini quand vous vintes*, I had finished when you came.

The Future has two tenses: the Future-absolute, and Future-anterior.

The Future-absolute expresses that an action will take place at a time which does not yet exist: as, *j' irai demain à la campagne*, I shall go to-morrow to the country.

The Future-anterior expresses an action that will take place at a time anterior to another action: as, *quand j' aurai fini, je sortirai*; when I shall have done, I will go out. Or, to a time to come: as, *j' aurai fini demain*, I shall have done to-morrow.

Mood consists in the change which the verb undergoes, to signify various intentions of the mind.

There are five Moods: the Indicative, Conditional, Imperative, Subjunctive, and Infinitive

The Indicative marks the affirmation in a positive and

absolute manner: as, *j' apprends*, I am learning; *je voyagerai*, I will travel. As it comprehends the three divisions of time, its tenses, which are eight in number, have been above explained.

The Conditional is the mood which affirms on conditions: as, *je le ferais, si je pouvais*; I would do it. if I could.

The Imperative mood is used for commanding, exhorting, entreating, or reproving: as, *sortez*, get out; *restons*, let us stay.

The Subjunctive mood expresses a subordination to what precedes: as, *je voudrais qu' il lût*, I wish he would read.

The Infinitive mood expresses a thing in a general and unlimited manner, without any distinction of number or person: as, *agir*, to act; *être craint*, to be feared.

THE PARTICIPLE. The Participle is a part of the verb, which partakes of the properties both of a verb and of an adjective: of a verb, as it has its signification and regimen; of an adjective, as it expresses the quality of a person or thing.

There are two participles: the Present, and the Past.

The participle Present always terminates in *ant*: as, *finissant*, finishing; *recevant*, receiving.

The participle Past has various terminations: as, *fini*, finished; *reçu*, received, &c.

THE ADVERB. The Adverb is a word which qualifies a verb, an adjective, or another adverb: as, *il parle bien*, he speaks *well*; *il est très éloquent*, he is *very* eloquent; *il parle très bien*, he speaks *very* well.

THE PREPOSITION. Prepositions serve to connect words with one another, and to show the relation between them : as, *il alla de Paris à Versailles*, he went *from* Paris to Versailles.

THE CONJUNCTION. The Conjunction is a word which serves to connect words or sentences : as, *Pierre et Jean rient*, Peter *and* John laugh ; *parlez peu et pensez bien*, speak little *and* think well.

THE INTERJECTION. Interjections are words which serve to express the sudden emotions of the soul : as, *Hé-las!* *alas!* *Ah!* *ah!* *Fi donc!* for shame!



## FRENCH GRAMMAR.

1. GRAMMAR, in general, is the art of speaking and writing correctly. To speak, is to convey our thoughts by means of articulate sounds. To write, is to render those thoughts permanently visible by means of certain signs, or characters, called Letters; and their number, disposed in order, constitutes what is called the Alphabet.

2. The letters of the French Alphabet are twenty-five, as in the *first* and *second* columns in the Table below: by the old pronunciation, they are named as in the *third*, and by the new pronunciation, as in the *fourth* column.

### FRENCH ALPHABET,

	O. P.	N. P.		O. P.	N. P.
A. .a.....	ah....	ah	N. .n.....	enn....	ne
B. .b.....	bay....	be*	O. .o.....	o.....	o
C. .c.....	say....	ke	P. .p.....	pay....	pe
D. .d.....	day....	de	Q. .q.....	ku....	ke
E. .e.....	a.....	a	R. .r.....	air....	re
F. .f.....	eff....	fe	S. .s.....	ess....	se
G. .g.....	jay....	ghe	T. .t.....	tay....	te
H. .h.....	ahsh..	he	U. .u.....	u.....	u†
I. .i.....	e.....	e	V. .v.....	vay....	ve
J. .j.....	jee....	je	X. .x.....	eeks..	kse
K. .k.....	kah....	ke	Y. .y.....	e-grec.	e-grec
L. .l.....	ell....	le	Z. .z.....	zed....	ze
M. .m.....	emm....	me			

\* In the new pronunciation, the letter *e*, after each consonant, is sounded like *u* in the English word *sun*.

† There is no approximate sound of this letter in English.



## FRENCH SOUNDS.

3. The Simple, or Vowel Sounds, in the French language, are nineteen in number, as follows :

## THE VOWEL SOUNDS.

French.	English.		French.
a sounds like	a in <i>bat</i> .	It is exemplified by	<i>face</i> .
â .....	a .. <i>bar</i> .	.....	<i>âge</i> .
e .....	u .. <i>sun</i> .	.....	{ <i>se</i> ,
é .....	e .. <i>met</i> .	.....	{ <i>jeune</i> .
è .....	ai .. <i>pair</i> .	.....	<i>était</i> .
ê .....	e .. <i>there</i> .	.....	<i>père</i> .
i .....	i .. <i>fig</i> .	.....	<i>tête</i> .
î .....	ie .. <i>field</i> .	.....	<i>pique</i> .
o .....	o .. <i>rob</i> .	.....	<i>gîte</i> .
ô .....	o .. <i>robe</i> .	.....	<i>robe</i> .
u has no standard in English.	.....	.....	<i>côté</i> .
û .....	.....	.....	<i>du</i> .
eû .....	.....	.....	<i>mûr</i> .
ou sounds like oo in <i>good</i> .	.....	.....	<i>jeûne</i> .
ôû .....	oo .. <i>mood</i> .	.....	<i>sous</i> .
an has no standard in English.	.....	.....	<i>voûte</i> .
in .....	.....	.....	<i>sang</i> .
on .....	.....	.....	<i>fin</i> .
un .....	.....	.....	<i>son</i> .
			<i>un</i> .

We see, from the above table, that *seven* sounds have no standard in the English language.

The *u* can be obtained in the following manner. Articulate first the sound *ee*, as in *eel* ; then, close your lips a little, and articulate the sound of *u*.

The sound *û* is the same in quality, but longer.

The sound *eû* is nearly the same in quality as that of *u* in the English word *sun*, but longer and closer.

An approximate to *an* may be found in the English word *antique* ; to *in* in *length* ; to *on* in *long* ; and to *un* in *rung*. These are termed the *nasal* sounds

4. *Y*. This letter, when alone, or when preceded or followed by a consonant, is pronounced as simple *i*; except in *pays*, *paysan*, *paysage*, which are pronounced *pé-is*, *pé-isan*, *pé-isage*. Between two vowels, it is pronounced *ii*: as, *balayer*, to sweep; *nettoyer*, to clean; which are pronounced, as if spelled with *ii*, *balaiier*, *nettoiier*. See the "Pronouncing French Reader," Rule 12, p. 280.

5. The Diphthongs, in the French language, are twenty-six in number. They are as follows:

### THE DIPHTHONGS.

ia. ... exemplified in . . . .	<i>verbiage</i> .	ieu. ... exemplified in . . . .	<i>milieu</i> .
ié. ....	<i>assied</i> .	ieû. ....	<i>curieux</i> .
ie {	iè. .... <i>ornière</i> .	ion. ....	<i>intention</i> .
	iai. .... <i>liaison</i> .	iou. ....	<i>cachoura</i> .
oi. ....	<i>gloire</i> .	iu. ....	<i>reliure</i> .
oi. ....	<i>moine</i> .	ouan. ....	<i>louanges</i> .
oi {	oi. .... <i>déclotré</i> .	oua. ....	<i>louable</i> .
	ouai. .... <i>jouaient</i> .	oui. ....	<i>réjouie</i> .
oué. ....	<i>enjoué</i> .	ua. ....	<i>nuage</i> .
oin {	oin. .... <i>besoin</i> .	ué. ....	<i>exténué</i> .
	ouin. .... <i>tintouin</i> .	uè {	uè. .... <i>continuel</i> .
io. ....	<i>Ethiopien</i> .		uai. .... <i>suai</i> !
ien. ....	<i>bien</i> .	uan. ....	<i>remuant</i> .
ian {	ian. .... <i>insouciant</i> .	ui. ....	<i>autrui</i> .
	ien. .... <i>patience</i> .	uin. ....	<i>juin</i> .
iaû. ....	<i>matériaux</i> .		

### 6. THE CONSONANTS.

*B*. This letter has the same sound as in English: as, *bal*, ball. It is always pronounced in the middle of words; as, *abdiquer*: and at the end of proper names; as, *Job*, *Caleb*, *Moab*: also in the words *radoub*, *rumb*, but not in *plomb*.

*C*. Has the sound of *k*, before *a*, *o*, *u*, *l*, *n*, *r*, except when it has a cedilla, in which case it sounds like *s*; as, *reçu*. It sounds like *s* before *e*, *i* and *y*. *Ch* has always the sound of *sh*, except when it is followed by a consonant, in which case it sounds like *k*. as, *ichneumon*.

**D.** Has the same sound as in English. It is always sounded in the middle of words: as, *adverbe*. It is likewise heard at the end of proper names: as, *David*, *Alfred*, &c.

At the end of many words it sounds like *t*, when the following word begins with a vowel, or *h* mute: as, *grand homme*, which is pronounced *grantome*.

**F.** Is sounded like the same letter in English: as, *fleur*, flower. It is sounded in all words ending in *if*.

**G.** Has the hard sound of *g* in the English word *go*, before *a*, *o*, *u*; as, *gomme*, gum: and the soft sound of *s* in *pleasure*, before *e*, *i*, *y*; as, *génie*, genius. *Gn*, at the beginning of words, has always the hard sound of the same letters in the English word *ignorant*: as in *gnomon*. In the middle of words, *gn* has a liquid sound, nearly similar to that of *ni* in the English word *onion*.

**H.** Is sounded with a guttural impulse, when aspirated; as *héros*, hero: and when it is *mute*, has no use but that of showing the etymology of the word; as, *honneur*, honour.

**J.** Has always the sound of *s* in *pleasure*: as, *jonglerie*, juggling.

**K.** Has always a hard sound, as in the English word *king*: as, *kiosque*, kiosk.

**L.** Has two sounds. The first is precisely the same as *l* in the English word *lily*: as, *lilas*, lilac. The second is liquid; and occurs when *l* at the end, or *ll* in the middle, of words is preceded by *i*. It resembles the sound of the second *i* in the English word *William*: thus, *pareil*, *pareille*. Exception: when *i* begins a word, as in *illustre*, the *ll* is never liquid. See further, Rules 3 and 13, "Pronouncing French Reader."

**M.** Has the sound of the same letter in English: as,

*momie*, mummy. *Um* is pronounced *omm*, in some words adopted from the Latin : as, *centumvir*, *album*.

*N.* Has the sound of the English *n* : as, *nonne*, nun

*P.* Is sounded as in English : as, *pourpre*, purple. *Ph* has the sound of *f* : as, *philosophe*, philosopher.

*Q.* Has the sound of *k* in *king* : as, *qualité*, quality.

*R.* Is sounded as in English, but much more strongly : as, *rivière*, river. It is always sounded at the end of words, after the vowels *a*, *i*, *o*, *u*. In substantives, adjectives and verbs ending in *er*, it is silent, unless it is followed by a word beginning with a vowel : as, *le dernier ouvrage*, the last work ; which is pronounced *le derniérouvrage*.

*S.* Has two sounds. The first is hard, as in the English word *sister* ; as, *suspensif*, suspensive : the second is soft, as in the English word *please* : as, *raison*, reason. It has uniformly the hard sound at the beginning of words ; and the soft, between two vowels. Both sounds occur in *saison*, season. *S* is mute before *ch* : as, *schall*, *Schaff-house*, &c. It is always sounded at the end of foreign proper names : as, *Brutus*, *Protésilas*, &c. In compound words it preserves the hard sound : as, *parasol*, parasol.

*T.* Has two sounds : the first is hard, as in the English word *tit* ; the second soft, like *c* in *cedar*. Both sounds occur in *construction*.

It is soft before *i*, connected with some other following vowel or vowels ; as, *patience*, *action* : except when it is immediately preceded by an *s* ; as, *question*.

*V.* Has the same sound as in English : as, *vivace*, vivacious. This letter, when doubled, is represented by the character *w*, which is met with in some foreign words, and is always pronounced as a simple *v* ; except in *wist* and *wiski*, when it has the sound of the English *w*.

X. Has generally the sound of *ks* in *axe* : as, *sexe*, sex ; *boxer*, to box. In all words beginning with *x*, or *ex*, followed by a vowel, it has the sound of *gz* : as, *Xavier*, *exil*. At the end of words it sounds like *z*, when followed by a word beginning with a vowel, or *h* mute ; as, *beaux yeux*, beautiful eyes ; *dix hommes*, ten men.

Z. Has generally the sound of *z* in *zone*, or *s* in *rose*.

---

*Note.*—The French and English words given as examples in the foregoing table of “The Vowel Sounds,” are used as *standards*, in the author’s “PRONOUNCING FRENCH READER.” The same French words, together with those in the preceding table of “The Diphthongs,” and an example of every other sound of difficult pronunciation in the French language, are introduced into a single short fable in that work ; to which the author begs leave respectfully to refer, as a practical and progressive introduction to French pronunciation, which may be considered *complete*, in every respect.

---

## ACCENTUATION AND PUNCTUATION.

7. In reading, due attention should be paid to the *Accents* and the *Cedilla*, to the *Apostrophe*, *Diæresis*, *Hyphen*, &c.

8. There are three Accents. The *acute* ( ' ), never placed but on *e* : as, in *bonté*.

9. The *grave* ( ` ), placed over *a*, *e*, *u* : as in *voilà*, *procès*, *où*.

10. The *circumflex* ( ^ ), placed over any long vowel : as in *plâtre*, *rêve*, *épître*, *apôtre*, *bûche*.

11. The *Cedilla* is a kind of comma, placed under *c*, giving it the sound of *s*, before *a*, *o*, *u* : as in *façade*, *façon*, *reçu*.

12. The *Apostrophe* ( ' ) marks the suppression of a vowel before another vowel, or an *h* mute : as in *l' oiseau*, *l' homme*, *s' il vient* ; for *le oiseau*, *le homme*, *si il vient*.

13. The *Diæresis* ( " ) is placed over the vowels *e*, *i*, *u*, to indicate that they are to be pronounced distinctly from the vowels by which they are accompanied.

14. The *Hyphen* ( - ) is particularly used in connecting compound words ; as in *belles-lettres*, *chefs-d' œuvre*, *arc-en-ciel*.

15. All the other distinctive marks, as the *Comma*, *Semicolon*, *Colon*, *Period*, *Interrogation*, *Admiration*, *Exclamation*, *Parenthesis*, &c., are the same in the French as in the English language.

---

## GENDERS OF FRENCH NOUNS.

It has already been stated (see Introduction, page 17 ante), that there are only two genders in French, the masculine and feminine. Whatever is neuter in English must therefore belong to either the one or the other of these genders in French. Every attempt hitherto made to give a system of rules for distinguishing the genders of inanimate objects by their *signification*, has ended only in perplexing and harassing the learner. "They are so numerous," says Boyer, "so intricate, and liable to so many exceptions, that the best and easiest way is to learn them in the dictionary."

---

## 16. GENDERS BY SIGNIFICATION.

The following short general rules, which have few or no exceptions, and are of easy apprehension and application, will be practically very useful.



## MASCULINE BY SIGNIFICATION.

1. All the names of the days, months and seasons of the year : except *mi*, middle, is used before the name of a month, forming with it a compound word, when it makes it feminine : as, *la mi-Juin*, the middle of June.

2. All objects to which we fancifully attribute the qualities of the male ; as, *vainqueur*, conqueror ; *jugé*, judge ; *génie*, genius.

3. The names of all metals, minerals and colours.

4. The names of all mountains, except those chains which have no singular ; the cardinal points ; and the winds, except *la bise*, *la tramontane*, *la brise*, and *les moussons*.

5. Words denoting the language of a country : as, *le Français*, *l' Italien*.

6. All the words compounded of a verb and a substantive, even though the substantive by itself be feminine ; except *garde-robe*, wardrobe, which is feminine.

7. And, *when used substantively*, all the ordinal, distributive, and proportional numbers ; also adjectives, infinitives of verbs, prepositions, adverbs, conjunctions, interjections ; and even sentences : except *la moitié*.

## FEMININE BY SIGNIFICATION.

1. The names of all the virtues ; except *courage* and *mérite*.

2. The names of all the vices.

3. All objects to which we attribute feminine qualities : as, *lune*, moon ; *terre*, earth, &c.

## 17. GENDERS BY TERMINATION.

The author, however, wishes the scholar mainly to rely on the TERMINATIONAL VOCABULARY, consisting of the two following Tables of Masculine and Feminine Terminations, which he has prepared, at great expense of time and labour, from the dictionary, with the express view of

furnishing a certain and universal method of determining the genders of nouns by their *terminations*. They should, therefore, be made a subject of attentive study; and it will be well to commit to memory those endings which have few or no exceptions.

To give an instance of the mode of using these Tables: let it be required to find the genders of the words *vinaigre* and *place*. The scholar will look in the Table of Masculine Terminations, and find *-aigre* in it; which tells him that *vinaigre* is masculine. He will next look for *-ace* in the same table, and not finding it there, will proceed to the Table of Feminine Terminations, where he will find it, and of course thereby determine its gender to be feminine. It is scarcely necessary to say, that all the Exceptions in the Table of Masculine Terminations are feminine; and all those in the Table of Feminine Terminations are masculine.

## TERMINATIONAL VOCABULARY.

### I. *Masculine Terminations.*

TERMINATIONS.	EXCEPTIONS
-a.....	sépia, bandora, talpa, falaca, vinula.
-abe.....	Souabe, syllabe.
-able.....	fable, table, étable.
-abre.....	cabre.
-ac.....	<i>None.</i>
-acle.....	bernacle, débacle, macle.
-acre.....	nacre.
-act.....	<i>None.</i>
-acte.....	cataracte, épacte.
-adre.....	escadre.
-af.....	<i>None.</i>
-age.....	rage, image, ambages, saxifrage, passera- nage, plage, cage,
-agme.....	<i>None.</i>
-ai.....	<i>None.</i>
-aigle.....	<i>None.</i>
-aigre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ail.....	<i>None.</i>



TABLE OF MASCULINE TERMINATIONS—*Continued.*

TERMINATIONS.	EXCEPTIONS.
-ain.....	main.
-air.....	chair.
-aire.....	affaire, aire, glaire, paire, grammaire, chaire, jugu- laire, haire, and eleven names of plants.
-ais.....	<i>None.</i>
-ait.....	<i>None.</i>
-aitre.....	<i>None.</i>
-aix.....	paix.
-al.....	<i>None.</i>
-alc.....	<i>None.</i>
-alme.....	scalme.
-alque.....	<i>None.</i>
-alt.....	<i>None.</i>
-alte.....	halte.
-am.....	<i>None.</i>
-àmbe.....	jambe.
-amble.....	<i>None.</i>
-ambre.....	chambre, antichambre.
-amme.....	anagramme, épigramme, flamme, oriflamme.
-amp.....	<i>None.</i>
-amphre.....	<i>None.</i>
-an.....	<i>None.</i>
-anc.....	<i>None.</i>
-ancre.....	ancre.
-and.....	<i>None.</i>
-ang.....	<i>None.</i>
-ange.....	fange, fontange, frange, grange, lavange, losange, mésange, orange, parasange, phalange, ven- dange, vidange.
-angle.....	sangle.
-aule.....	<i>None.</i>
-ant.....	<i>None.</i>
-antre.....	<i>None.</i>
-anvre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ao.....	<i>None.</i>
-ap.....	<i>None.</i>
-aphe.....	épigraphe, épitaphe, orthographe.
-aps.....	<i>None.</i>
-aque.....	attaque, baraque, caque, cardiaque, casaque, célia- que, claque, laque, maque, patraque, plaque, polaque, riqueraque, sandaraque, thériaque.
-ar.....	<i>None.</i>
-arbre.....	<i>None.</i>
-arc.....	<i>None.</i>
-ard.....	<i>None.</i>

TABLE OF MASCULINE TERMINATIONS—*Continued.*

## TERMINATIONS.

## EXCEPTIONS.

-are.....	cithare, tare, fanfare, tiare.
-arme.....	alarme, arme, larme.
-arque.....	anasarque, parque, remarque.
-arre.....	bagarre, barre, carre, simarre.
-ars.....	<i>None.</i>
-art.....	hart, part, quotepart, plupart.
-atre.....	chartre, martre, dartre.
-as.....	<i>None.</i>
-asme.....	<i>None.</i>
-aspe.....	<i>None.</i>
-asque.....	basque, bourrasque, brasque, frasque.
-ast.....	<i>None.</i>
-aste.....	caste, haste.
-astre.....	<i>None.</i>
-at.....	<i>None.</i>
-atre.....	finâtre.
-au.....	eau, peau.
-aud.....	<i>None.</i>
-aume.....	paume.
-aut.....	<i>None.</i>
-aux.....	chaux.
-ave.....	cave, bave, betterave, entraves, épaves, octave, rave, cassave, étrave, enclave, lave, architrave.
-avre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ax.....	<i>None.</i>
-é.....	pitié, moitié, amitié, inimitié. <i>Words ending in -té are not included here: see -é, in the Table of Feminine Terminations.</i>
-ec.....	<i>None.</i>
-ecl.....	<i>None.</i>
-ect.....	<i>None.</i>
-ecte.....	pandectes, secte.
-ectre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ed.....	<i>None.</i>
-ède.....	<i>None.</i>
-èdre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ef.....	nef.
-effle.....	nèfle.
-ège.....	allège.
-egme.....	<i>None.</i>
-ègne.....	<i>None.</i>
-egs.....	<i>None.</i>
-egue.....	grègue.
-eigle.....	<i>None.</i>
-eil.....	<i>None.</i>

TABLE OF MASCULINE TERMINATIONS—*Continued.*

TERMINATIONS.	EXCEPTIONS.
-el.....	<i>None.</i>
-elfe.....	<i>None.</i>
-em.....	<i>None.</i>
-ème.....	brème, crème, trirème, septième ( <i>a sequence at piquet.</i> )
-emple.....	<i>None.</i>
-emps.....	<i>None.</i>
-en.....	<i>None.</i>
-ens.....	<i>None.</i>
-ent.....	gent, dent.
-entre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ep.....	<i>None.</i>
-epre.....	<i>None.</i>
-epte.....	<i>None.</i>
-eptre.....	<i>None.</i>
-er.....	mer, cuiller.
-erc.....	<i>None.</i>
-ercle.....	<i>None.</i>
-erf.....	<i>None.</i>
-ergue.....	vergue.
-erle.....	perle.
-erme.....	berme, ferme.
-ers.....	<i>None.</i>
-ert.....	<i>None.</i>
-ertre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ès.....	<i>None.</i>
-est.....	<i>None.</i>
-este.....	peste, sieste, soubvreveste, veste.
-estre.....	limestre.
-et.....	<i>None.</i>
-être.....	guêtre, fenêtre.
-eu.....	<i>None.</i>
-euble.....	<i>None.</i>
-euf.....	<i>None.</i>
-eul.....	<i>None.</i>
-eume.....	<i>None.</i>
-eune.....	<i>None.</i>
-euple.....	<i>None.</i>
-euque.....	<i>None.</i>
-eur.....	<i>There are sixty-seven feminines in eur, which express properties and qualities: as, laideur, hauteur, rougeur, &amp;c.</i>
-eurre.....	<i>None.</i>
-eurt.....	<i>None.</i>
-euvre.....	<i>None.</i>

TABLE OF MASCULINE TERMINATIONS—*Continued.*

TERMINATIONS.	EXCEPTIONS.
-eutre . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-eux . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-evre . . . . .	chèvre, fièvre, lèvres, plèvre.
-ex . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-exe . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-exte . . . . .	sexe.
-ez . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-èze . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-i . . . . .	merci, fourmi, après-midi, ammi, gagui, demi
-ibe . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-ible . . . . .	bible.
-ibre . . . . .	fibre.
-ic . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-ice . . . . .	avarice, cicatrice, cotice, épice, immondice, inter- stice, injustice, justice, lice, malice, matrice, milice, natices, notice, police, prémices, varice, vénefices; and, of course, all the names that de- signate women: <i>cs</i> , actrice, cantatrice, &c.
-icle . . . . .	bernicle, bésicle, manicle.
-ict . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-id . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-ide . . . . .	ride, bride, ides, égide, pyramide, cantharide, hé- morroïdes, cycloïde, cariatide, bastide, carotide, chrysalide, cissoïde, conchoïde, énéide, éphé- lides, éphémérides, épinyctides, héroïde, néré- ide, parotide, rhomboïde, ricinoïde.
-idre . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-if . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-iffre . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-ige . . . . .	lige, tige, volige.
-igle . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-igme . . . . .	énigme.
-igne . . . . .	guigne, ligne, vigne, consigne.
-igre . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-il . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-ile . . . . .	pile, vigile, île, bile, file, huile, tuile.
-ilphe . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-ils . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-iltre . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-im . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-imbe . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-imbre . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-in . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-inc . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-inct . . . . .	<i>None.</i>

TABLE OF MASCULINE TERMINATIONS—*Continued.*

TERMINATIONS.	EXCEPTIONS.
-indre.....	<i>None.</i>
-inge.....	méninge.
-inq.....	<i>None.</i>
-intre.....	<i>None.</i>
-inx.....	<i>None.</i>
-iple.....	<i>None.</i>
-ir.....	<i>None.</i>
-ire.....	cire, satire, ire, Hégire.
-irque.....	<i>None.</i>
-irse.....	<i>None.</i>
-irte.....	<i>None.</i>
-is.....	vis, brebis, fleur de lis, chauve-souris.
-isc.....	<i>None.</i>
-isme.....	<i>None.</i>
-isque.....	bisque, brisque.
-iste.....	piste, batiste, liste, baliste.
-isthme.....	<i>None.</i>
-istre.....	<i>None.</i>
-it.....	nuit.
-ithme.....	<i>None.</i>
-itre.....	vitre, épître, mitre, huître.
-ivre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ix.....	perdrix.
-o.....	<i>None.</i>
-ob.....	<i>None.</i>
-obe.....	robe.
-oble.....	<i>None.</i>
-obre.....	<i>None.</i>
-oc.....	<i>None.</i>
-ocle.....	<i>None.</i>
-ocre.....	ocre.
-od.....	<i>None.</i>
-ode.....	commode, épode, méthode, ode, pagode, spode.
-of.....	<i>None.</i>
-offre.....	<i>None.</i>
-oge.....	épitoge, horloge, loge, toge.
-ogme.....	<i>None.</i>
-ogue.....	drogue, églogue, vogue, synagogue, pirogue.
-oi.....	loi, foi, paroi.
-oid.....	<i>None.</i>
-oif.....	<i>None.</i>
-oil.....	<i>None.</i>
-oine.....	<i>Names of plants and stones with this termination are feminine.</i>
-oint.....	<i>None.</i>

TABLE OF MASCULINE TERMINATIONS—*Continued.*

## TERMINATIONS.

## EXCEPTIONS.

-oir .....	<i>None.</i>	
-oire.....	foire, poire, moire, histoire, gloire, mâchoire, nageoire, victoire, and all names indicating the power of holding or containing: as, almoire, écritoire, &c.	
-ois .....	fois.	
-oit .....	<i>None.</i>	
-oitre.....	<i>None.</i>	
-oivre.....	<i>None.</i>	
-ol .....	<i>None.</i>	
-olf.....	<i>None.</i>	
-om .....	<i>None.</i>	
-omb .....	<i>None.</i>	
-ombre.....	ombre, pénombre.	
-ome and -onime ..	gomme, pomme.	
-omphe.....	<i>None.</i>	
-ompte .....	<i>None.</i>	
-on.....	pamaison, prison, trahison, moisson, foison, garnison, façon, boisson, chanson, toison, rançon, leçon, guérison. See -ion and -aison, in the Table of Feminine Terminations.	
-onche.....	conche, jonche.	
-oncle .....	pétoncle.	
-ond.....	<i>None.</i>	
-one.....	anémone, annone, argemone, mangone, aumône, zône.	
-ongle.....	<i>None.</i>	
-ongre.....	<i>None.</i>	
-onstre.....	<i>None.</i>	
-out .....	<i>None.</i>	
-onze.....	<i>None.</i>	
-op .....	<i>None.</i>	
-or .....	<i>None.</i>	
-orbe .....	<i>None.</i>	
-orche.....	torche.	
-ord .....	<i>None.</i>	
-ordre .....	<i>None.</i>	
-ore.....	mandragore, métaphore, aurore, pécore, amphore, pléthore.	
-orps.....	<i>None.</i>	
-ors .....	<i>None.</i>	
-ort .....	<i>None.</i>	
-os .....	<i>None.</i>	
-ot .....	dot.	
-ou .....	<i>None.</i>	

TABLE OF MASCULINE TERMINATIONS—*Concluded.*

## TERMINATIONS.

## EXCEPTIONS.

-oude.....	soude.
-oufle.....	pantoufle.
-ouffre.....	<i>None.</i>
-oug.....	<i>None.</i>
-ouge.....	gouge.
-oup.....	<i>None.</i>
-our.....	cour.
-ours.....	<i>None.</i>
-out.....	<i>None.</i>
-oux.....	toux.
-oxe.....	<i>None.</i>
-u.....	glu, tribu, vertu.
-ube.....	jujube.
-uc.....	<i>None.</i>
-ucre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ud.....	<i>None.</i>
-uf.....	<i>None.</i>
-ufle.....	<i>None.</i>
-uge.....	<i>None.</i>
-uis.....	<i>None.</i>
-ul.....	<i>None.</i>
-um.....	<i>None.</i>
-un.....	<i>None.</i>
unt.....	<i>None.</i>
-ur.....	<i>None.</i>
urne.....	urne.
us.....	<i>None.</i>
usc.....	<i>None.</i>
uscle.....	<i>None.</i>
uste.....	<i>None.</i>
-ustre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ut.....	<i>None.</i>
-ux.....	<i>None.</i>
-uxe.....	<i>None.</i>
-yge.....	apophyge.
-yme.....	<i>None.</i>
-ynx.....	<i>None.</i>
-ype.....	<i>None.</i>
-yphe.....	<i>None.</i>
-yrse.....	<i>None.</i>
-yrte.....	<i>None.</i>
-yx.....	<i>None.</i>

## II. FEMININE TERMINATIONS.

## TERMINATIONS.

## EXCEPTIONS.

-ace. ....	espace.	
-ache. ....	gamaches.	
-ade. ....	stade, jade, grade.	
-afe. ....	parafe.	
-afile. ....	None.	
-afre. ....	cafre.	
-agne. ....	alpagne, bague, pagne.	
-agre. ....	clérage, méléage.	
-ague. ....	carague, gyrovague, ossifrage.	
-aie. ....	None.	
-aigne. ....	None.	
-aile. ....	baile.	
-aille. ....	None.	
-aine. ....	domaine, Le Maine ( <i>a province of France.</i> )	
-ainte. ....	None.	
-aise. ....	malaise, mésaise.	
-aison. ....	None.	
-aïsse. ....	None.	
-aite. ....	None.	
-ale. ....	scandale, ovale, pétale.	
-alque. ....	None.	
-alle. ....	intervalle.	
-alse. ....	None.	
-alve. ....	None.	
-ame. ....	amalgame, épithalame, hippopotame, vidame, blâme, dictame.	
-ampe. ....	None.	
-ance. ....	rance.	
-anche. ....	dimanche.	
-ande. ....	multiplande.	
-andre. ....	méandre, palixandre.	
-ane. ....	âne, crâne, mânes, organe, filigrane, arcane.	
-angue. ....	None.	
-anne. ....	None.	
-anque. ....	manque, saltinbanque.	
-anse. ....	None.	
-ante. ....	None.	
-ape and -appe. ....	None.	
-arbe. ....	None.	
-arce. ....	None.	
-arche. ....	None.	
-arde. ....	péricarde.	
-arge. ....	large.	
-ars. ....	None.	



TABLE OF FEMININE TERMINATIONS—*Continued.*

TERMINATIONS.	EXCEPTIONS.
argue.....	largue.
-arne.....	acame.
-arpe.....	<i>None.</i>
-arse.....	tarse.
-arte.....	<i>None.</i>
-ase.....	gymnase, Pégase, Caucase.
-asse.....	Parnasse.
-ate and atte.....	automate, Euphrate, stigmaté.
-aube.....	<i>None.</i>
-auche.....	<i>None.</i>
-aude.....	<i>None.</i>
-auge.....	<i>None.</i>
-aule.....	saule.
-aupe.....	<i>None.</i>
-ause.....	<i>None.</i>
-ausse.....	<i>None.</i>
-auve.....	<i>None.</i>
-axe.....	axe.
-é.....	<i>The feminine termination here meant is -té. The exceptions are: été, traité, té, velouté, pâté, côté, bénédicité, aparté, arrêté, comté, comité.</i>
-ée.....	musée, trophée, hyménée, coryphée, scarabée.
-èbre.....	zèbre.
-èce.....	<i>None.</i>
-êche.....	prêche.
-eigne.....	peigne.
-eille.....	<i>None.</i>
-eine.....	<i>None.</i>
-èle.....	zèle, modèle.
-elle.....	libelle, vermicelle, isabelle, violoncelle.
-empe.....	<i>None.</i>
-ence.....	silence.
-encre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ende.....	dividende.
-endre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ène.....	alcaligène, amphisbène, épagomène, épïcène, hydrogène, molybdène, oxygène, paralipomènes, phalène, silène, tungsthène, chêne, frêne, pêne, troène.
-enne.....	renne.
-ense.....	<i>None.</i>
-ente.....	trente.
-êpe.....	<i>None.</i>
epse.....	<i>None.</i>

TABLE OF FEMININE TERMINATIONS—*Continued.*

TERMINATIONS.	EXCEPTIONS.
-èque.....	arèque, cercopithèque.
-erbe.....	verbe.
-erce.....	commerce.
-erche.....	<i>None.</i>
-ère.....	cimetière, viscère, mystère, cautère, adultère, ulcère, cratère, caractère, hémisphère, monastère, ministère, clystère, mésentère, planisphère, presbytère, quadrilatère, réverbère, somnifère, stère.
-erge.....	cierge.
-erne.....	averne, cerne, malgouverne, quaterne, terne.
-erre.....	cimeterre, verre, parterre, tonnerre, paratonnerre lierre. <i>Cimetière, verre, parterre, tonnerre, paratonnerre, lierre.</i>
-erse.....	<i>None.</i>
-erte.....	<i>None.</i>
-erve.....	<i>None.</i>
-èse.....	dièse, diocèse, manganèse.
-esque.....	<i>None.</i>
-esse.....	<i>None.</i>
-ète and -ette.....	amulette, squelette, casse-noisette, and a few other compound words.
-eue.....	<i>None.</i>
-eule.....	<i>None.</i>
-eure.....	<i>None.</i>
-euse.....	<i>None.</i>
-eute.....	<i>None.</i>
-euve.....	fleuve.
-œuvre.....	<i>None.</i>
-ève.....	rève.
-iche.....	acrostiche, caniche, fétiche, hémistiche, stokfiche.
-ie.....	génie, périhélie, parapluie, pavie, incendie.
-iffe.....	<i>None.</i>
-igue.....	<i>None.</i>
-ille.....	calville, codicille, codille, mille, spadille, trille, vaudeville.
-ime.....	abîme, centime, crime, régime, décime, grime, millésime, mime, sublime.
-ince.....	<i>None.</i>
-inde.....	inde, Pinde.
-ine.....	<i>None.</i>
-ingle.....	<i>None.</i>
-ingue.....	élingue.
-inte.....	<i>None.</i>
-ion.....	pion, septentrion, croupion, scorpion, fanion, camion, scion, bastion, bestion, gabion, galion,

TABLE OF FEMININE TERMINATIONS—*Continued.*

## TERMINATIONS.

## EXCEPTIONS.

	talion, million, billion, trillion, lampion, brimborion, alérion, alcyon, horion, morion, orion.
-ipe . . . . .	participe, principe.
-ipse . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-ique . . . . .	portique, topique tropique, cantique, distique, émétique, narcotique, viatique.
-ise . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-isse . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-ite . . . . .	mérite, démérite, gîte, site, rite, satellite, aréopagite.
-ive . . . . .	convive, qui-vive.
-obe . . . . .	globe, lobe.
-oce . . . . .	négoce, sacerdoce.
-oche . . . . .	coche, médianoche, proche, reproche.
-ogne . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-oie . . . . .	foie.
-oile . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-oise . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-oisse . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-oite . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-oix . . . . .	choix.
-ole and -olle . . . . .	capitole, rôle, monopole, pôle, protocole, symbole, contrôle.
-olte . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-ombe . . . . .	lombes, rombe.
-ompe . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-once . . . . .	quinconce.
-onde . . . . .	monde
-onge . . . . .	mensonge, songe.
-ongue . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-onne . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-onte . . . . .	conte.
-ontre . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-ope . . . . .	baroscope, engyscope, horoscope, météoroscope, microscope, télescope.
-ophe . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-oque . . . . .	colloque, engastriloque, soliloque, ventriloque.
-orce . . . . .	divorce.
-orde . . . . .	exorde, monocorde, pentacorde, tétracorde.
-orge . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
-orme . . . . .	corne, orme.
-orne . . . . .	capricorne, cromorne.
orte . . . . .	cloporte.
ose . . . . .	<i>None.</i>
osse . . . . .	carrosse, colosse.

TABLE OF FEMININE TERMINATIONS—*Concluded.*

## TERMINATIONS.

## EXCEPTIONS

-oste.....	anagnoste, périoste.
-ote and -otte....	antidote, vote, tire-botte.
-ouche.....	piédouche.
-oucle.....	<i>None.</i>
-oudre.....	<i>None.</i>
-oue.....	<i>None.</i>
-ouffe.....	bouffe.
-ouille.....	<i>None.</i>
-oule.....	<i>None.</i>
-oulpe.....	<i>None.</i>
-oupe....	groupe.
-ouque.....	<i>None.</i>
-ourbe.....	<i>None.</i>
-ource.....	<i>None.</i>
-ourde.....	<i>None.</i>
oure.....	<i>None.</i>
-ourme.....	<i>None.</i>
-ourse.....	<i>None.</i>
-ouse.....	<i>None.</i>
-ousse.....	<i>None.</i>
-oute.....	doute.
-outre.....	contre.
-uble.....	<i>None.</i>
-uce.....	prépuce.
-uche.....	<i>None.</i>
-ude.....	prélude.
-ue.....	<i>None.</i>
-ule and -ulle....	adminicule, animalcule, conciliabule, conventicule, corpuscule, crépuscule, fascicule, galéricule, globule, indicule, lobule, manipule, matricule, module, monocule, monticule, opuscul, pécule, pédicule, perpendicule, préambule, prostibule, régule, ridicule, scrupule, véhicule, ventricule, vestibule.
ulte.....	culte, tumulte.
-ume.....	apostume, bitume, costume, légume, rhume.
-une.....	<i>None.</i>
-upe.....	<i>None.</i>
-uque.....	<i>None.</i>
-ure.....	augure, parjure, murmure, tellure, mercure, colure.
-use.....	<i>None.</i>
-ute and -utte....	parachute.
-uve.....	<i>None.</i>

18 There are some nouns which are masculine in one signification, and feminine in another: thus, *livre*, a book, is masculine, while *livre*, a pound weight, is feminine. These have not been included in the foregoing Rules and Tables: and are as follow:

LIST OF ALL THE NOUNS WHICH ARE MASCULINE IN ONE SIGNIFICATION, AND FEMININE IN ANOTHER.

MASCULINE.

aide	assistant
aigle	eagle
amour	love, affection
aune	alder-tree
barbe	Barbary horse
barde	poet
Basque	Biscayan
berce	bird
braque	setting dog
câpre	privateer
caraque	cocoa
carpe	wrist
cartouche	ornament in designing
coche	passage-boat
couple	a man and his wife
crêpe	mourning
critique	a critic
délice	delight
enfant	male child
enseigne	officer
exemple	example
faux	falsehood
fin	chief point
follicule	gall-bladder
forêt	gimlet
foudre	tun-vessel, a great warrior
fourbe	impostor
garde	a guardman
greffe	register
guenles, pl.	gules in heraldry
guide	guide
haute-paye	soldier in extra pay
héliotrope	sun-flower
hymne	chaunt of the ancients
larves, pl.	evil spirits
litre	measure for liquids
livre	book
manche	handle
manœuvre	bricklayer's man
matamore	boaster
mémoire	bill, memoir
mire	boar five years old
mode	mood, system
môle	pier, dyke

FEMININE.

aide	help
aigle	standard
amours, pl.	intrigues of gallantry
aune	ell
barbe	beard
barde	slice of bacon
basque	skirt
berce	a plant
braques, pl.	claws of a shell fish
câpre	caper, a pickle
caraque	a kind of ship
carpe	carp
cartouche	cartridge
coche	old sow
couple	a brace, a pair
crêpe	pancake
critique	criticism
délices	delights
enfant	female child
enseigne	flag
exemple	writing copy
faux	scythe
fin	end
follicule	seed-vessel in plants
forêt	forest
foudre	thunderbolt
fourbe	knavery, cheat
garde	defence
greffe	graft
gueule	the jaws of a beast
guide	rein
haute-paye	extra-pay
héliotrope	spotted precious stone
hymne	Christian hymn
larve	worm, grub
litre	mourning hangings of churches
livre	pound weight, piece of money
manche	sleeve, channel
manœuvre	manœuvre
matamore	slave-prison
mémoire	memory
mire	aim, the button on the barrel of a gun to take aim by
mode	fashion, custom
môle	false idea

*S'achetant un pièce de crêpe et une cr*

## MASCULINE.

mort	corpse, dead man
moufle	set of pulleys
moule	model, pattern
mousse	ship boy
œuvre	action, work
ombre	game at cards
orge mondé	peeled barley
orgue	organ
page	page, attendant
paillasse	theatrical clown
palme	measure of length
panache	plume
pantomime	pantomime player
parallèle	comparison
pendule	pendulum
période	height
pique	spade at cards
pivoine	a kind of snipe
plane	plume-tree
platine	platina
plinthe	squared body of soldiers
poêle	stove
Polacre	a Polish gentleman
ponte	gambler
poste	station, office
pourpre	purple colour, purple fever
prétexte	pretence
pupille	male pupil
quadrille	game
régale	organ-pipe
relâche	relaxation
remise	hackney coach
serpenteaire	constellation
sinople	vert in heraldry
solde	balance of an account
somme	sleep, nap
souris	smile
tour	turn, trick
triomphe	triumph, victory
trompette	trumpeter
vague	empty space
vase	vase
voile	veil

## FEMININE.

mort	death
moufle	mitten
moule	shell fish
mousse	moss, froth
œuvre	literary work
ombre	shadow, ghost
orge	barley
orgues, pl.	organs
page	page in a book
paillasse	mattress
palme	advantage
panache	peacock
pantomime	pantomime
parallèle	parallel line
pendule	clock
période	epoch, period
pique	spear
pivoine	peony, a plant
plane	carpenter's tool
platine	plates of a watch
plinthe	plinth in architecture
poêle	frying-pan
polacre	polacca
ponte	laying of eggs
poste	postoffice, the mail
pourpre	purple dye, badge of royalty
prétexte	ancient Roman dress
pupille	the apple of the eye
quadrille	troop of horse in a tournament
régale	the holding a vacant bishopric
relâche	the touching at a seaport
remise	coach-house
serpenteaire	dragonwort
sinople	anemomy
solde	pay of a soldier
somme	sum of money
souris	mouse
tour	tower
triomphe	game at cards
trompette	trumpet
vague	slime
vase	vase
voile	sail

## INTRODUCTION TO THE EXERCISES.

*Note.*—The five following Exercises are intended to be introductory to those which follow them; and should therefore be well understood and remembered by the learner. He will bear in mind that he is expected to apply all the knowledge, and acquaintance with words, which he has obtained in *previous* Exercises, to *those which succeed*; as they are all progressive in their construction, and lead practically, and by almost imperceptible advances, from the easy to the difficult.

19. The learner is to render the English definite article *the*, in the singular, by

*le*, before a noun masculine: as, *le livre*, *the book*;

*la*, before a noun feminine: as, *la rue*, *the street*; and

*l'*, before a noun of either gender, beginning with a vowel or *h* mute: as, *l' âme*, *the soul*; *l' histoire*, *the history*;

and in the plural, by,

*les*, before nouns of either gender: as, *les livres*, *the books*; *les rues*, *the streets*.

20. *A*, or *an*, is to be rendered by

*un*, before a noun masculine: as, *un homme*, *a man*; and

*une*, before a noun feminine: as, *une femme*, *a woman*.

## EXERCISE I.\*

The wood.	The forest.	The houses.	The men.	The court.	
bois, <i>m.</i>	forêt, <i>f.</i>	maisons	hommes	cour, <i>f.</i>	
The foot.	The arms.	The room.	The garden.	The windows.	
pieu, <i>m.</i>	bras	chambre, <i>f.</i>	jardin, <i>m.</i>	fenêtres	
A history.	A novel.	A foreigner.	A walk.	A day.	
histoire, <i>f.</i>	roman, <i>m.</i>	étranger, <i>m.</i>	promenade, <i>f.</i>	jour, <i>m.</i>	
A night.	The sun.	The moon.	The stars.	A body.	A card.
nuît, <i>f.</i>	soleil, <i>m.</i>	lune, <i>f.</i>	étoiles	corps, <i>m.</i>	carte, <i>f.</i>
A crown.					
écu, <i>m.</i>					

21. The prepositions *of* and *from* are rendered by *de*; *to* and *at* by *à*; and when followed by the article, thus:

---

\* In the following Exercise, and wherever they may occur throughout the grammar, *m.* stands for *masculine*, *f.* for *feminine*, *s.* for *singular*, *pl.* for *plural*, *art.* for *article*, *h asp.* for *h aspirated*, &c. &c. The initial *h*, of all words in the Exercises which are not preceded or followed by *h asp.*, will be considered by the scholar as *mute*.



*of the*  
and  
*from the,*  
by

*du*, before a noun masculine singular beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated: as, *du* parc, *of the* park;  
*de la*, before a noun fem. sing., beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated: as, *de la* rivière, *of the* river;  
*de l'*, before a noun singular of either gender, beginning with a vowel or *h* mute: as, *de l'* esprit, *of the* mind;  
*des*, before any noun in the plural: as, *des* plumes, *of the* pens.

*to the*  
and  
*at the,*  
by

*au*, before a noun masculine singular beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated: as, *au* chirurgien, *to the* surgeon;  
*à la*, before a noun feminine singular beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated: as, *à la* boîte, *to the* box;  
*à l'*, before a noun singular of either gender beginning with a vowel or *h* mute: as, *à l'* ami, *to the* friend;  
*aux*, before any noun in the plural: as, *aux* lois, *to the* laws.

22. And when these prepositions are followed by *a* or *an*, thus:

*of a*  
and  
*from a,*  
by

*d'* *un*, before a noun masculine: as, *d'* *un* jour, *of a* day;  
*d'* *une*, before a noun feminine: as, *d'* *une* nuit, *of a* night.

*to a*  
and  
*at a,*  
by

*à un*, before a noun masculine: as, *à un* couteau, *to a* knife;  
*à une*, before a noun feminine: as, *à une* fourchette, *to a* fork.

## EXERCISE II.

The palace	Of the king.	Of the queen.	Of the man.	Of the
palais, <i>m.</i>	roi	reine	homme	
book.	To the chair.	To the arm-chair.	To the hands.	To the
livre, <i>m.</i>	chaise, <i>f.</i>	fauteuil, <i>m.</i>	mains	
fingers.	From a balcony.	From a window.	Of a prince.	To a
doigts	balcon, <i>m.</i>	fenêtre, <i>f.</i>	prince	
princess.	Of the gardens.	Of the evening.	To the courtiers.	
princesse	jardins	soir, <i>m.</i>	courtisans	
Of a table.	To the master.	To a lady.	Of the soul.	Of the
table, <i>f.</i>	maître	dame	âme, <i>f.</i>	
sheep.	To a ram.	Of the shepherds.		
brebis, <i>f.</i>	bélier	bergers		

23. These same prepositions, when followed by the



possessive adjectives *my, thy, his, her, its, our, your, and their*, are rendered thus :

		s.	m.	s. f.	pl. m. & f.
<i>of and from my</i>	} by	de	mon	ma	mes
..... <i>thy</i>		..	ton	ta	tes
..... <i>his, her, its</i>		..	son	sa	ses
..... <i>our</i>		..	notre	notre	nos
..... <i>your</i>		..	votre	votre	vos
..... <i>their</i>		..	leur	leur	leurs
<i>to and at my</i>	} by	a	mon	ma	mes
&c. &c.		&c.	&c.	&c.	&c.

24. It must be observed here, that possessive adjectives, in French, always agree in gender and number with the *object possessed*; and not with the *possessor*, as in English; for which reason they must always be repeated before every noun.

25. Thus, speaking of a lady's parents, the English say, *her father and mother*; while the French express the same by, *son père et sa mère*. In the English example, *her* agrees with *lady*, the possessor; and although it may be, scarcely ever is repeated. But in the French, as we have said, the possessive adjectives agree with the objects possessed, in this case *père* and *mère*; which being of different genders, obviously require correspondent genders in the possessive adjectives prefixed to them. Such is the reason of a rule which has been extended so as to embrace nouns of similar gender.

26. The prepositions *of* and *from*, *to* and *at*, when followed by the demonstrative adjectives *this* or *that*, *these* or *those*, must be rendered thus :

<i>of and from this or that</i> , by <i>de</i>	{	<i>ce</i> , before a noun masculine beginning with a consonant or <i>h</i> aspirated : as, <i>de ce lieu</i> , <i>of that place</i> ;
<i>to and at this or that</i> , by <i>à</i>		<i>cet</i> , before a noun masculine beginning with a vowel or <i>h</i> mute : as, <i>à cet homme</i> , <i>to this man</i> ;
		<i>cette</i> , before a noun feminine : as, <i>à cette femme</i> , <i>to this woman</i> .
<i>of and from these or those</i> , by <i>de ces</i> ,	{	before nouns plural of either gender : as, <i>de ces portes</i> , <i>of these doors</i> <i>à ces souliers</i> , <i>to these shoes</i> .
<i>to and at these or those</i> , by <i>à ces</i> ,		

## EXERCISE III.

Of my clothes. Of thy handkerchief. Of his pocket. Of your  
 habits. mouchoir, *m.* poche, *f.*  
 letters. Of our treasure. To their house. Of this steeple. Of that  
 lettres. trésor, *m.* maison, *f.* clocher, *m.*  
 hero. Of this tower. Of these models. Of my sister. To your  
 à *asp.* héros. tour, *f.* modèles. sœur.  
 relations. The top of this mountain. To my friend. Of these  
 parens. sommet, *m.* montagne, *f.* ami, *m.*  
 pleasures. To our duties. To their connexions. Of his acquaint-  
 plaisirs. devoirs. liaisons. connais-  
 ances. To my neighbours.  
 sances. voisins.

27. The Apostrophe (') marks, we have said, page 30, the suppression of a vowel, before another vowel, or an *h* mute.

28. This suppression is called *elision*. *A, e, i* are the only vowels liable to be thus cut off. Of the suppression of the latter of the three, but two instances occur, viz. in the conjunction *si*, before the pronoun singular and plural, *il, ils* : thus, *s'il, s'ils*. | *Donnez-moi du beurre.*

29. The *a* is suppressed only in *la*, feminine, both when an article and a pronoun.

30. The elision of *e* occurs in the masculine article and pronoun *le*, and also in many other monosyllables, such as, *je, me, te, se, de, ce, ne, que*, and in the compounds of *que*, such as, *parceque, quonique, &c.*

31. It is allowable, either to retrench, or retain the final *e* of the preposition *entre*, between, among, when it precedes the pronouns *eux, elles* and *autres*; but it is always suppressed in the following compound words :

entr'acte, *an interlude*; s'entr'aider, *to help one another*;  
 entr'ouïr, *to hear imperfectly*; entr'ouvrir, *to half open*.

## EXERCISE IV.\*

The soul. The heroine. The mind. He <sup>2</sup>loves <sup>1</sup>him. She <sup>2</sup>loves  
 âme, *f.* héroïne. esprit, *m.* Il aime le. elle aime

\* The learner will perceive small figures, <sup>1</sup>, <sup>2</sup>, <sup>3</sup>, &c. placed frequently before English words, in these Exercises. He will understand by these figures, that in writing his Exercises, he is to place the French

<sup>1</sup>her. I love this man. You do not <sup>2</sup>understand <sup>1</sup>me. He <sup>2</sup>esteems  
<sup>1</sup>a. Je homme. Vous —\* ne entendez pas me. estime  
<sup>1</sup>thee. He goes away. It was the <sup>2</sup>golden <sup>1</sup>age. Do not go  
<sup>1</sup>te. se en-va. Ce était de or âge. — ne allez pas  
<sup>1</sup>there. If he comes. If they please. What has he said? Till  
<sup>1</sup>là. Si vient. Si veulent. Que a-t- dit? Jusque au  
<sup>1</sup>night. Though he says. Since he <sup>2</sup>knows <sup>1</sup>him. When he <sup>2</sup>saw  
<sup>1</sup>soir. Quoique dise. Puisque connaît le. Lorsque vit  
<sup>1</sup>them. Between them. Some body is come. I have <sup>2</sup>done <sup>1</sup>nothing  
<sup>1</sup>les. Entre eux. Quelque un est venu. ne ai fait rien.  
 He loves nobody. He <sup>2</sup>has <sup>3</sup>never <sup>4</sup>seen <sup>1</sup>it.  
 ne ne a jamais vu.

32. There are many words which are alike in both languages, and others which differ only in their termination. The words which are perfectly alike, are those particularly, which have the following terminations: viz. in *al, ble, ace, ance, ence, ice, aple, ade, age, ege, ge, ule, ile, ine, ion, ant* and *ent*.

33. Many other words require only a change of termination, as follows:

English.	French.	English.	French.
-gy into	-gie,	as <i>energy</i> ,	énergie.
-ary ....	-aire,	.. <i>military</i> ,	militaire.
-ory ....	-oire,	.. <i>glory</i> ,	gloire.
-cy ....	-ce,	.. <i>clemency</i> ,	clémence.
-ty ....	-té,	.. <i>beauty</i> ,	beauté.
-ous ....	-eux,	.. <i>dangerous</i> ,	dangereux.
-our ....	-eur,	.. <i>favour</i> ,	faveur.
-or ....	eur,	.. <i>error</i> ,	erreur.
-ine ....	-in,	.. <i>clandestine</i> ,	clandestin
-ive ....	-if,	.. <i>expressive</i> ,	expressif.
-ry ....	-rie,	.. <i>fury</i> ,	furie.

words in the order indicated by the figures; as the order of arrangement of words in the French language, frequently differs from that proper to the English. Thus, the expression, a <sup>3</sup>*mischievous* <sup>1</sup>*old* <sup>2</sup>*monkey*, is to be rendered into French, arranged as follows: *un vieux singe malin*; which, it will be observed, is conformable to the order of the figures preceding the English words. Occasionally, however, for convenience sake, these small figures will precede the French words: in which case, also, the words will of course be arranged as indicated by the figures.

\* This sign, —, indicates that the English word under which it is placed, requires no corresponding word in the French.

English.	French.	English.	French.
<i>dy</i>	.... -die,	.. <i>perfidy</i> ,	perfidie.
<i>sty</i>	.... -stie,	.. <i>modesty</i> ,	modestie.

*N. B.* Adjectives in *eux, if, in*, make their feminines. respectively, in *euse, ive, ine* ; in *ant, ent, and al*, take *e* mute.

### EXERCISE V.

The beauty of that fable. The horror of vice, the utility of  
*f. f. f. art. m. f. art.*  
 science. The atrocity of this action. The simplicity of that machine.  
*f. f. f. f. f.*  
 An <sup>2</sup>audacious <sup>1</sup>conspirator. The absurdity of that opinion. The  
*m. f. f.*  
<sup>2</sup>military <sup>1</sup>evolutions. An <sup>2</sup>industrious <sup>1</sup>nation. An <sup>2</sup>important  
*f.*  
<sup>1</sup>victory. An <sup>2</sup>alimentary <sup>1</sup>pension. A <sup>2</sup>dangerous <sup>1</sup>animal. A  
*f. f. m.*  
<sup>2</sup>famous <sup>1</sup>general. His <sup>2</sup>constant <sup>1</sup>generosity. His fidelity is  
*f. f.*  
 indubitable. Your clemency is admirable. The destruction of his  
*f. f.*  
 fortune was the consequence of his temerity. She is very scrupu-  
*f. fut f. f.*  
 lous. This history is incontestable. Your facility is prodigious  
*f. f.*  
 His perfidy is odious. The sublimity of his sentiments is still  
*f. f.*  
 preferable to the energy of his expressions. This instrument is not  
*f. m.*  
 harmonious. The prosperity of the wicked is not durable. Your  
*f.*  
<sup>2</sup>insidious <sup>1</sup>presents are not acceptable. His memory is truly extra-  
*m. sont f.*  
 ordinary. It was a great favour. His modesty is sincere. It was a  
*f. f.*  
<sup>2</sup>brutal, <sup>3</sup>but <sup>4</sup>prudent <sup>1</sup>action.

## PART I.

## CHAPTER I.

## OF THE SUBSTANTIVE, OR NOUN.

See Introduction, p. 16.

34. The plural, in French, is generally formed, as in English, by adding an *s* to the singular : as,

<i>sing.</i>	<i>plur.</i>
le président, <i>the president</i> ;	les présidents, <i>the presidents</i> .
un ange, <i>an angel</i> ;	des anges, <i>some angels</i> .

35. EXCEPTIONS. 1. Substantives singular, ending in *s*, *x* or *z*, remain unalterable : as,

<i>sing.</i>	<i>plur.</i>
le fils, <i>the son</i> ;	les fils, <i>the sons</i> .
la voix, <i>the voice</i> ;	les voix, <i>the voices</i> .
le nez, <i>the nose</i> ;	les nez, <i>the noses</i> .

36. 2. Nouns ending in *au* or *eu*, take an *x* : as,

<i>sing.</i>	<i>plur.</i>
bateau, <i>boat</i> ;	bateaux, <i>boats</i> .
feu, <i>fire</i> ;	feux, <i>fires</i> .

37. 3. Substantives ending in *al*, are changed into *aux* : as,

<i>sing.</i>	<i>plur.</i>
cheval, <i>horse</i> ;	chevaux, <i>horses</i> .
hôpital, <i>hospital</i> ;	hôpitaux, <i>hospitals</i> .

38. 4. The *t*, in polysyllables ending in *ant* or *ent*, is dropped or retained at pleasure : as,

<i>sing.</i>	<i>plur.</i>
diamant, <i>diamond</i> ;	diamans, <i>diamonds</i> .
appartement, <i>apartment</i> ;	appartemens, <i>apartments</i> .

39. But monosyllables retain the *t* : as,

<i>sing.</i>	<i>plur.</i>
gant, <i>glove</i> ;	gants, <i>gloves</i> .
dent, <i>tooth</i> ;	dents, <i>teeth</i> .

40. REMARKS. 1. The substantives *chou, caillou, bijou, genou, hibou* and *joujou*, take *x*, and make *choux, &c.*

41. 2. The substantives *bal, cal, pal, régat, carnaval*, follow the general rule, simply taking *s*.

42. 3. The substantives *bail, sous-bail, corail, émail, soupirail, vantail, ventail*, change *ail* into *aux*, and make *baux, &c.* *Ail*, garlic, makes *aulx*; *bétail*, cattle, makes *bestiaux*; *bercail*, sheepfold, has no plural.

43. 4. The four following have two plurals :

travail	{	<i>work, makes travaux ;</i> <i>a trave (with farriers), makes travaux ;</i> <i>occupation of a minister with a sovereign, makes tra-</i> <i>vails.</i>
ciel,	{	<i>the tester of a bed, makes ciels de lit ;</i> <i>the first bed of stone in a quarry, makes ciels de car-</i> <i>rières ;</i> <i>sky, heaven, makes cieux.</i>
œil,	{	<i>eye, makes yeux ;</i> <i>an oval window, makes œils de bœuf.</i>
aïeul,	{	<i>ancestor, makes aïeux ;</i> <i>grandfather, makes aïeuls.</i>

## EXERCISE VI.

The flowers of the gardens.	The niceties of the languages.	The	
fleur	jardin.	délicatesse	langue.
palaces of the kings.	The woods of these countries.	The walnuts	
palais	roi.	bois	pays.
of their orchards.	The pictures of those painters.	The feathers of	
verger.	tableau	peintre.	plume
these birds.	The melody of their voices.	The gods of the pagans.	
oiseau.	mélodie	voix.	dieu
The jewels of my sisters.	The cabbages of our gardens.	These	
bijou	sœur.	chou	jardin.
2 charming 1 places.	The horses of my stables.	The fans of these	
charmant	lieu.	cheval	écurie.
ladies.	The front-gates of those churches.	The actions of my	
dame.	portail	église.	
ancestors.	The evils of this life.	The victories of those generals.	
aïeul.	mal	vie, f.	
The works of those architects.	The corals of those seas.	The	
travail	architecte	corail	mer.

learned-men of those times. The presents of my parents. The  
 savant temps-là.  
 teeth of your combs. The playthings of our children. The heads  
 dent peigne. joujou enfant. tête  
 of these nails.  
 clou.

## CHAPTER II.

### OF THE ARTICLE.

See Introduction, p. 18.

44. The article is *le*, for the masculine; as, *le jour*, the day: *la*, for the feminine; as, *la nuit*, the night: *les*, for the plural of both genders; as, *les jours*, the days; *les nuits*, the nights.

45. It always agrees in gender and number with the substantive to which it relates.

46. Elision of the article takes place before a vowel, or *h* mute: as, *l'ambition*, the ambition; *l'honneur*, the honour.

47. It never takes place in the plural.

48. Contraction takes place in the following cases:

49. 1. Before a masculine singular beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated: as,

du prince, <i>of the prince</i> ,	instead of de le prince
du héros, <i>of the hero</i> ,	..... de le héros;
au prince, <i>to the prince</i> ,	..... à le prince;
au héros, <i>to the hero</i> ,	..... à le héros.

50. 2. Before any noun in the plural:

des princes, <i>of the princes</i> ,	instead of de les princes;
des enfants, <i>of the children</i> ,	..... de les enfants;
aux amis, <i>to the friends</i> ,	..... à les amis;
aux femmes, <i>to the women</i> ,	..... à les femmes.



51. The article, and the prepositions *à* and *de*, whether contracted or not, are invariably to be repeated before every substantive: as,

Il dut la vie à la clémence  
et à la magnanimité du vain-  
queur.

Il est comblé d'honneur et de  
gloire.

*He owed his life to the clemen-  
cy and magnanimity of the con-*  
*queror.*

*He is loaded with honour and  
glory.*

### EXERCISE VII.

The soul of man, without cultivation, is like a diamond  
âme, *f.* art. culture diamant, *m.*  
in the rough. Self-love and pride are always the  
.....brut..... art. amour-propre art. orgueil  
offspring of a <sup>2</sup>weak <sup>1</sup>mind. The top of the mountains,  
partage, *m.* esprit, *m.* sommet, *m.* montagne,  
and the bottom of the valleys, are equally agreeable. Silk is  
fond, *m.* vallée art. Soie, *f.*  
soft to the touch. The happiness of a <sup>2</sup>feeling <sup>1</sup>man, is to relieve  
douce toucher, *m.* bonheur, *m.* sensible de subvenir à  
the wants of the poor. A man given to pleasure was  
besoin pauvre, *m. s.* livré art. plaisir, *m.* ne fut  
never a great man. He obeyed the orders of the king. The  
obéit à ordres  
warbling of birds, the murmuring of streams, the enamel  
gazouillement, *m.* art. murmure, *m.* art. ruisseau émail, *m.*  
of meadows, the coolness of woods, the fragrance of  
art. prairie fraîcheur, *f.* art. parfum, *m.* art.  
flowers, and the sweet smell of plants, contribute greatly to  
fleur douce odeur, *f.* art. plante contribuent beaucoup  
the pleasures of the mind, and to the health of the body. The  
*m.* santé, *f.* corps, *m.*  
history of man, under all the circumstances of life, is the  
art. dans toutes circonstances art. vie, *f.*  
study of the wise. What we value is health,  
étude sage, *m.* Ce que estimons cé est art. art.  
frugality, liberty, vigour of mind and body.  
*f.* art. *f.* art. *f.* art. art.

52. *Du, de la, de l', des*, put before substantives taken in a partitive sense, always imply that some word or words understood precede them, such as *une portion, un morceau, quelques-uns*, &c., the equivalent of which, in English, is *some*, or *any*: as,



Je mange du pain.	<i>I eat bread.</i>
Il prend de la peine.	<i>He takes some trouble.</i>
Vous avez de l' amitié.	<i>You have some friendship.</i>
Avez-vous des livres ?	<i>Have you got any books ?</i>

53. It is to be observed that *some*, or *any*, is sometimes understood in English too ; but the equivalent of *du, de la, de l', des*, which is *of the*, is very seldom expressed.

## EXERCISE VIII.

Give me some bread and	butter.	Offer him some meat.
Donnez-moi	<i>art. beurre, m.</i>	Offrez-lui <i>viande, f.</i>
Take some salt.	There is	mustard.
Prenez	<i>sel, m.</i>	Voilà <i>art. moutarde, f.</i>
gherkins.	Shall I offer you some chicken ?	Shall I help you to
cornichons.	•• Vous offrirai-je ••	poulet ? <i>m.</i>
some fruit ?	I will take, with pleasure, some	broth.
fruit ? <i>m.</i>	Je prendrai	<i>volontiers</i>
some knives.	Pour me out some beer.	Drink some wine.
couteaux.	Versez-moi —	<i>bière, f.</i>
Take some tea.	Put in some sugar and	milk.
Prenez	<i>thé, m.</i>	Mettez-y
some noise.	There falls some	hail.
bruit, <i>m.</i>	Il tombe	<i>grêle, f.</i>
Have you any ink and	pens ?	Put some oil and
Avez-vous	<i>encre</i>	<i>art. plumes ?</i>
vinegar to the salad.	Eat some	lobster.
<i>vinaigre, m. sur</i>	<i>salade, f.</i>	Mangez
received some gold and	silver.	
<i>reçu</i>	<i>or</i>	<i>art. argent.</i>

## CHAPTER III.

## OF THE ADJECTIVE.

54. The adjective is a word, which is added to a substantive, to express its quality, or manner of being : as,

<i>bon papier, good paper ;</i>	<i>bonne plume, a good pen ;</i>
<i>cet habit, this coat ;</i>	<i>mon habit, my coat.</i>

55. In French, the adjective takes the gender and number of the substantive to which it relates.

56. There are two sorts of adjectives ; the *qualificative*, and *determinative*.

57. The *qualificative* adjective is that which expresses the quality of the substantive : as,

bon, *good* ; beau, *fine*.

58. The *determinative* adjective is that which determines or limits the signification of its substantive : as,

*ma* maison, *my house* ; *cette* porte, *this door*.

### OF THE QUALIFICATIVE ADJECTIVE.

59. This adjective can express the quality, either simply, or with comparison, or to a very high degree ; hence, three degrees of qualification.

60. The three degrees of qualification are : the *positive*, the *comparative* and the *superlative*.

61. 1. The positive expresses simply the quality : as,

Le mérite est *modeste*.      *Merit* is *modest*.

62. 2. The comparative expresses the quality with comparison. There are three sorts of comparatives :

63. The comparative of equality, which is formed by putting *aussi*, as, or *autant*, as much, before the adjective, and *que*, as, after it : as,

César était *aussi* éloquent que brave.      *Cæsar* was as eloquent as brave.

César était *autant* admiré qu' estimé      *Cæsar* was as much admired as esteemed.

64. The comparative of inferiority, which is formed by placing *moins*, less, before the adjective, and *que*, than, after it : as,

La violette est *moins* belle que la rose.      *The violet* is less beautiful than the rose.

65. And the comparative of superiority, which is formed by putting *plus*, more, before the adjective, and *que*, than, after it : as,

La rose est *plus* belle que la violette.      *The rose* is more beautiful than the violet.

## EXERCISE IX.

Shipwreck and death are less fatal than the pleasures  
*art. naufrage, m. art. mort, f. funeste*  
 which attack virtue. <sup>2</sup>Pope's images are as perfect  
*qui attaquent, art. vertu, f. De Pope art. f. parfait*  
 His style is harmonious. Delicacy of taste is a gift  
*de m. art. D  licatesse art. go  t, m. don, m.*  
 of nature, as scarce as true genius. The love of  
*art. f. rare art. vrai g  nie, m. amour*  
 our neighbour is as necessary in society, for the  
*art. — prochain, m. dans art. f. pour*  
 happiness of life, as in christianity, for <sup>2</sup>eternal  
*bonheur, m. art. art. christianisme, m.   ternel art.*  
 salvation. It is as easy to do good, as to do evil.  
*salut, m. ais   de faire art. bien, m. art. mal, m.*  
 He has as much wit as his brother, but he has not so much  
*de esprit autant*  
 vanity. The republic of Athens was more illustrious than  
*de vanit  . r  publique, f. Ath  nes illustre*  
 than of Lacedemon. Homer was, perhaps, a greater genius  
*Lac  d  mone. Hom  re peut-  tre grand*  
 than Virgil; but Virgil had a more <sup>2</sup>delicate and more <sup>3</sup>refined  
*Virgile; avait fin d  licat*  
 taste than Homer. Milton <sup>2</sup>appears to <sup>1</sup>me more sublime than all  
*para  t — me tous*  
 the other <sup>2</sup>epic <sup>1</sup>poets. Autumn is less varied than  
*autre   pique po  te. art. Automne, m. vari  *  
 spring, but it is richer.  
*art. printemps, m. riche.*

66. The three following adjectives are comparatives in themselves :

67. *Meilleur*, better, is used instead of *plus bon*, which is never said : as,

Ceci est bon, mais cela est meilleur. *This is good, but that is better.*

68. *Pire*, worse, is used instead of *plus mauvais*: as,  
 Sa condition est mauvaise, mais elle a   t   pire. *His condition is bad, but it has been worse.*

69. *Moindre*, less, is used instead of *plus petit*: as,  
 Ma d  pense est petite, mais la v  tre est moindre. *My expense is small, but yours is less.*

70. These comparatives must not be mistaken for the three adverbs, *mieux*, *pis*, *moins*, which are generally rendered by the same English words, better, worse, and less.

71. *Mieux* is used instead of *plus bien*, more well, which is said in neither language : as,

Ceci est bien, mais cela est *mieux*. *This is well, but that is better.*

72. *Pis* is used for *plus mal*, worse : as,

Il se portait mal, mais il est *pis* que jamais. *He was unwell, but he is worse than ever.*

73. *Moins*, is used for *plus peu*, which is never heard : as,

Je parle peu, vous parlez encore *moins*. *I speak little, you speak still less.*

### EXERCISE X.

His reasoning is not better than yours. Your style is  
raisonnement, *m.* le vôtre. Votre *m.*  
a great deal better than that of his brother. The thickness of  
de beaucoup; celui épaisseur, *f.*  
this wall is less than that of the <sup>2</sup>next <sup>1</sup>wall. This column is  
mûr, *m.* celle voisin colonne, *f.*  
less than the other in height and thickness. The remedy  
autre en hauteur en grosseur. remède, *m.*  
is worse than the disease. Your horse is worse than mine.  
mal, *m.* cheval, *m.* le mien.  
The wine which he brought to-day is still worse than that  
*m.* a apporté aujourd'hui encore  
of yesterday. Give him more bread and less meat. From  
hier. Donnez-lui de pain de viande.  
bad to worse. It is worse than ever.  
en Ce

74. 3 The *superlative* expresses the quality in a very high, or in its highest degree : hence, two sorts of superlatives, the *absolute* and the *relative*.

75. The superlative absolute, which marks a very high degree without comparison, is formed by putting *très*, *fort*, *bien*, very, before the adjective : as,

La modestie est très-rare. *Modesty is very rare.*

76. The superlative relative, which marks the highest degree with comparison, is formed by prefixing the article *le* to the comparatives *meilleur*, *moindre*, *pire*, and to the adverbs *plus* and *moins* : as,

La modestie est la plus belle des qualités. *Modesty is the finest of qualities.*

77. *Plus* and *moins*, with the article, are repeated before every adjective.

## EXERCISE XI.

That landscape is very diversified, very extensive, and infinitely  
paysage, *m.* varié étendu

agreeable on every side. The Alps are very high and very  
de tout côté, *m.* Alpes, *f.*

steep. The style of Fenelon is very rich, and very harmonious, but  
escarpé. *m.*

it is sometimes prolix; that of Bossuet is extremely sublime,  
il quelquefois prolix; celui élevé,

but it is sometimes harsh and unpolished. The most beautiful  
dur rude.

comparison that there is, perhaps, in any language, is that which  
*f.* ..qu'il y ait.. dans aucun langue, *f.* celle que

Pope has drawn from the Alps, in his Essay on Criticism. The most  
tiré Essai *art.* Critique, *f.*

able men <sup>2</sup>are <sup>1</sup>not always the most virtuous. The most an-  
habile gens pas vertueux.

cient and most general of all kinds of idolatry, was the  
*art.* espèce, *f.*

worship rendered to the sun. The least excusable of all  
culte, *m.* rendu soleil, *m.* *art*

errors, is that which is wilful.  
erreur, *f.* volontaire.

## OF THE FORMATION OF THE FEMININE.

78. RULE 1. All adjectives ending in the singular in *e* mute, are of both genders, except *maître* and *traître*, which make *maîtresse* and *traîtresse* : as,

un homme aimable, *an amiable man* ;  
une femme aimable, *an amiable woman*.

79. RULE 2. Whenever the adjective does not end in *e* mute, the *e* mute is added to form its feminine : as,

un homme prudent,     *a prudent man;*  
 une femme prudente,   *a prudent woman.*

80. RULE 3. Adjectives in *el, ien, on, et*, to form their feminine, double their last consonant, and take *e* mute : \* as,

<i>masc.</i>	<i>fem.</i>	
cruel,	cruelle,	<i>cruel ;</i>
ancien,	ancienne,	<i>ancient ;</i>
bon,	bonne,	<i>good ;</i>
net,	nette,	<i>clean.</i>

81. RULE 4. Adjectives ending in *f*, change this letter into *v*, and take *e* mute : as,

<i>masc.</i>	<i>fem.</i>	
bref,	brève,	<i>short ;</i>
actif,	active,	<i>active ;</i>
naïf,	naïve,	<i>ingenious ;</i>
neuf,	neuve,	<i>new.</i>

82. RULE 5. Adjectives ending in *x*, change this letter into *s*, and take *e* mute : as,

<i>masc.</i>	<i>fem.</i>	
honteux,	honteuse,	<i>ashamed ;</i>
vertueux,	vertueuse,	<i>virtuous ;</i>
jaloux,	jalouse,	<i>jealous.</i>

83. RULE 6. Adjectives ending in *eur*, form their feminine in three different manners :

84. 1. Those that are derived from verbs, change the *r* into *s*, and take *e* mute : as,

<i>masc.</i>	<i>fem.</i>	
trompeur,	trompeuse,	<i>deceitful ;</i>
menteur,	menteuse,	<i>lying.</i>

85. 2. Those that are of Latin origin, change *eur* into *rice* : as,

<i>masc.</i>	<i>fem.</i>	
acteur,	actrice,	<i>actor, actress ;</i>
admirateur,	admiratrice,	<i>admirer.</i>

---

\* But *concret, complet, discret, indiscret, inquiet, incomplet, prêt, replet, secret, surer*, form their feminine by changing *et* into *ête*, and make *concrète, complète, &c.*

86. 3. Those that indicate opposition or comparison, take only an *e* mute, and follow the second rule : as,

<i>masc.</i>	<i>fem.</i>	
antérieur,	antérieure,	<i>anterior ;</i>
meilleur,	meilleure,	<i>better.</i>

## EXERCISE XII.

She is decent. This house is well situated. This pear is too ripe. Cette maison, *f.* bien situé. poire, *f.* trop mûr. She is tall and well formed. This story is very grand fait. histoire, *f.* très entertaining. This person is very unsteady. This mountain amusant. personne, *f.* léger. montagne, *f.* is steep. This road is not very safe. The door is not open. escarpé. route, *f.* sûr. porte, *f.* ouvert. This room is dark. This street is too narrow. It is an ancient chambre, *f.* obscur. rue, *f.* étroit. Ce custom. She is a good actress. His memory will be immortal coutume, *f.* Ce acteur. Sa mémoire, *f.* immortel. His manners are natural. The engagement was warm. That is manière, *f.* naïf. action, *f.* vif. . . Voilà . . an <sup>2</sup>original <sup>1</sup>thought. This cloth is the best of all. They are neuf pensée, *f.* étoffe, *f.* *f. pl.* Ce <sup>2</sup>delusive <sup>1</sup>promises. He seduces by his <sup>2</sup>fawning <sup>1</sup>manners. des trompeur promesse, *f.* séduit flatteur The delightful valley of Tempe is in Thessaly. She is deaf délicieux vallée, *f.* Tempé Thessalie. sourd and dumb. muet.

87. The following adjectives form their feminine irregularly, and must be learned separately. Some of them have no feminine, others have no masculine :

## MASCULINE.

## FEMININE.

absous .....	absoute .....	absolved
baillieur .....	bailleresse .....	a lessor
bas .....	hasse .....	low
beau .....	} belle .....	fine
bel, before a vowel or h mute ..		
bénin .....	bénigne .....	benign
Etiché, (said of eggs) .....		rotten and broken
blanc .....	blanche .....	white
no masc. ....	hlette .....	overripe
borgne .....	} borgne .....	} one-eyed
caduc .....	caduque .....	decrepid
no masc. ....	cantatrice .....	a celebrated songstress
cas .....	casse .....	coarse, broken



## MASCULINE.

## FEMININE.

chasseur.....	hunter	{	chasseuse.....	}	huntress
châtain.....			chasseresse (in poetical style)...	}	nut-brown
coi.....			coite.....		still, snug
défendeur.....			défenderesse.....		defendant
demandeur.....			demanderesse.....		plaintiff
dispos.....					active, cheerful
doux.....			douce.....		sweet
drôle.....		{	drôle.....	}	queer
			drôlesse.....	}	a worthless creature
enchanteur.....			enchanteresse.....		delightful
épais.....			épaisse.....		thick
exprès.....			expresse.....		express
fat.....					fop
faux.....			fausse.....		false
favori.....			favorite.....		favourite
fol, before a vowel or h mute.....		{		}	
fou.....			folle.....		mad
frais.....			fraîche.....		fresh
franc.....			franche.....		frank
gentil.....			gentille.....		genteel
gouverneur.....	governor		gouvernante.....		governess
gras.....			grasse.....		fat
Grec.....			Grecque.....		Greek
gros.....			grosse.....		big
jouvenceau.....	a lad, a stripling		jouvencelle.....		a lass
jumeau.....			jumelle.....		twin
las.....			lasse.....		tired
long.....			longue.....		long
maître.....	master		maîtresse.....		mistress
malin.....			maligne.....		malignant
métis.....			métisse.....		mongrel
mol, before a vowel or h mute.....		{		}	
mou.....			molle.....		soft
mulâtre.....			mulâtresse.....		mulatto
nouveau.....		{		}	
nouvel, before a vowel or h mute.....			nouvelle.....		new
nul.....			nulle.....		none
paillet, (said of wine).....					pale
pareil.....			pareille.....		like
pauvre.....		{	pauvre.....	}	poor, beggar
			pauvresse.....	}	
pêcheur.....			pêcheresse.....		a sinner
préfix.....			préfixe.....		prefixed
profès.....	monk		professe.....		nun
public.....			publique.....		public
résous.....					melting, resolved
roux.....			rousse.....		red
sec.....			sèche.....		dry
serviteur.....			servante.....		servant
sot.....			sotte.....		silly
témoin.....			témoin.....		witness
tiers.....			tierce.....		third
tors.....			torse.....		twisted
traître.....	traitor		traîtresse.....		traitress
Turc.....			Turque.....		Turkish
vengeur.....			vengeresse.....		vengeful
vermeil.....			vermeille.....		lively red
vieil, before a vowel or h mute.....		{		}	
vieux.....			vieille.....		old
vieillot.....			vieillotte.....		oldish



## EXERCISE XIII.

The grass is very thick. That soup is very good, but too fat.  
 herbe, *f.* soupe, *f.* mais trop  
 It is a foolish undertaking. There is no truth in all that. This  
 sot entreprise, *f.* Il n'y a nul vérité, *f.* dans tout cela.  
 water is not clean. It is a <sup>2</sup>very <sup>3</sup>silly <sup>1</sup>history. It is in the newest  
 eau, *f.* net. Ce fol *f.* à  
 fashion. It is a fine statue. The law is express upon that point.  
 mode, *f.* beau *f.* loi, *f.* *m.*  
 He lives in a state of luxurious idleness. This wax is not very  
 vit dans — — mou oisiveté, *f.* cire, *f.*  
 white. She is as fresh as a rose. The paint on that wainscot  
 — comme *f.* peinture, *f.* de lambris, *m.*  
 is not dry. His answer is a mere evasion. The thing is public.  
 réponse, *f.* franc défaite, *f.* chose, *f.*  
 That plant possesses a <sup>2</sup>pernicious <sup>1</sup>property. She is of a <sup>2</sup>benevolent  
 herbe, *f.* a malin qualité, *f.* a — bénin  
 character. The <sup>2</sup>avenging <sup>1</sup>thunderbolt smote that impious wretch.  
 humeur, *f.* vengeur foudre, *f.* frappa impie, *m.* —  
 He <sup>2</sup>extended to <sup>1</sup>us a protecting hand. This woman is jealous and  
 tendit — nous protecteur main, *f.* jaloux  
 deceitful. His temper is mild. This colour is too red. These  
 faux. Son humeur, *f.* doux. couleur, *f.* roux.  
 old clothes are good for nothing.  
 hardes, *f.* ne à rien.

## OF THE FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

88. GENERAL RULE. Every adjective forms its plural by the simple addition of *s*: as *bon, bons; bonne, bonnes*.

89. This rule is without exception, as it regards the feminine termination; but the masculine has the three following exceptions.

90. 1. Adjectives ending in *s* or *x*, do not change their termination: as, *gros, gras, heureux*.

91. 2. Those ending in *au*, take *x*: as *beau, beaux; nouveau, nouveaux*.

92. 3. Some adjectives ending in *al* change this termination into *aux*; as, *égal, égaux; général, généraux*: others take only *s*; as, *fatal, fatals; nasal, nasals*: some have no plural; as, *mental, vocal*, &c.

## EXERCISE XIV.

They are envious and jealous. Those fowls are big and fat.  
 Ils jaloux. poulet  
 Owls are <sup>2</sup>frightful <sup>1</sup>birds. There are some beautiful jewels.  
 art. Hibou des hideux oiseau. ..Voilà.. de beau bijou.  
 The two new operas have succeeded. Men are  
 deux nouveau ont réussi. art. ne  
<sup>2</sup>only <sup>1</sup>equal in the infirmities of nature. The <sup>2</sup>genera  
 par art.  
<sup>1</sup>officers are assembled. This fruit is excellent. His proficiency  
 assemblé. m. pl. sont Ses progrès, m. pl.  
 is slow, but solid. All his friends have been very glad to <sup>2</sup>see  
 sont solide. ami été bien aise de voir  
<sup>1</sup>him. Those ladies are tired with walking. You have powerful  
 le. las de marcher. avez de  
 enemies, but their efforts will be vain and useless. The four <sup>2</sup>cardi-  
 ennemi, leurs seront inutile. quatre  
 nal <sup>1</sup>points are the east, west, south and north  
 orient, occident, sud nord.

## OF THE DETERMINATIVE ADJECTIVE.

93. There are four kinds of Determinative Adjectives the *Numeral*, *Demonstrative*, *Possessive*, and *Indefinite*.

94. 1. The *Numeral* are those which determine the signification of the substantive, by adding to it an idea of number, or order.

95. There are two sorts of numeral adjectives: the *Cardinal* and *Ordinal*.

96. The *Cardinal* are those which express the number: as, *un, deux, trois, quatre*, &c.; one, two, three, four, &c.

97. The *Ordinal* are those which mark the order, or rank: as, *premier, second, troisième, quatrième*, &c.; first, second, third, fourth, &c.

98. 2. The *Demonstrative* are those which determine the signification of the substantive, by giving to it the idea of indication. These adjectives are: *ce, cet, cette, ces*: as,

ce soldat, *this soldier*;  
 cet enfant, *this child*;

cette femme, *this woman* ;  
ces animaux, *these animals*.

99. 3. The *Possessive* are those which relate to possession or property. These adjectives are

m.	f.	pl.	m. & f.
mon,	ma,	mes,	<i>my.</i>
ton,	ta,	tes,	<i>thy.</i>
son,	sa,	ses,	<i>his, her, its.</i>
notre,	notre,	nos,	<i>our.</i>
votre,	votre,	vos,	<i>your.</i>
leur,	leur,	leurs,	<i>their.</i>

*sa mère est  
mon ami*

100. These adjectives, in French, always agree in gender and number with the object *possessed*, and not with the *possessor*, as in English, for which reason they must be repeated before every noun : as,

*Mon père, ma mère et mes frères sont à la campagne, avec vos amis et leurs enfants.*

*My father, mother and brothers are in the country with your friends and their children.*

*Mon cousin est allé consoler sa sœur, qui a perdu son fils.*

*My cousin is gone to console his sister, who has lost her son.*

101. *Mon, ton, son*, instead of *ma, ta, sa*, are used before a noun feminine beginning with a vowel or *h* mute : thus, *mon âme*, my soul ; *ton humeur*, thy humour ; *son amitié*, his friendship, must be said, instead of *ma âme, ta humeur, sa amitié*.

102. 4. The *Indefinite* are those which express their subjects in an indefinite or general manner. These adjectives are :

chaque,	<i>every.</i>	quelque,	<i>some.</i>
nul,	<i>no.</i>	plusieurs,	<i>several.</i>
pas un,	<i>not one.</i>	tel,	<i>such.</i>
aucun,	<i>any.</i>	quel,	<i>what.</i>
même,	<i>same.</i>	quelconque,	<i>whatever.</i>
tout,	<i>all.</i>		

### EXERCISE. XV.

My principles, my love of retirement, my taste for  
principe, goût, *m.* pour art. retraite, *f.* amour, *m.*  
every thing that is connected with learning, and my detestation  
tout ce qui ...tient.... à art. ins. action, *h asp.* haine, *f*

of all spirit of party, every thing has induced me to prefer a  
pour esprit parti, tout a porté préférer —  
life passed in the closet, to the <sup>2</sup>active <sup>1</sup>life of the world. Do not  
art. — de — cabinet, m. —  
think, my daughter, that thy candour, thy ingenuousness, thy taste,  
pense, que f. f. goût, m.  
so delicate and so refined, and even thy graces, can shelter  
délicat fin, même puissent mettre à l'abri  
thee from censure. His wit, his talents, his honesty, and  
de art. f. esprit, m. honnêteté,  
even his good nature, make him beloved by every body. Our  
bonhomie, f. font aimer de tout le monde.  
constancy and our efforts will, <sup>2</sup>at last <sup>1</sup>surmount all obstacles.  
f. — enfin surmonteront art.  
I see nothing that can be censured in your conduct. Their  
ne vois rien que on puisse reprendre dans conduite.  
taste for the fantastical, the monstrous, and the marvellous,  
bizarre, m. monstrueux, m. merveilleux, m.  
gives to all their compositions, although very fine in themselves, an  
donne f. quoique en elles-mêmes,  
air of deformity, which shocks at first sight. Every age has  
m. difformité, qui choque à art. coup-d'œil, m. a  
its pleasures; every condition has its charms. He will submit  
état, m. charme. ne veut se soumettre  
to no authority whatever. Several historians have related that  
à aucun autorité, f. historiens ont raconté  
action in the same manner. Man fears to <sup>2</sup>see <sup>1</sup>himself such as  
f. de f. art. craint de voir se que  
he is, because he is not such as he ought to be. Great crimes  
parce que devrait être. art. m.  
are always preceded by some other crimes. Not one of all those  
sont précédé de — Nul m.  
who <sup>2</sup>went <sup>1</sup>there has returned. Not one believes that intelligence.  
qui ont été y ne en est revenu. ne croit nouvelle, f.  
You have no means of succeeding in that affair. This  
ne avez moyen, m. réussir dans f.  
poem is the same as that I was <sup>2</sup>mentioning to <sup>1</sup>you. All  
poème, m. que celui dont ai parlé —  
the <sup>2</sup>celestial <sup>1</sup>bodies are in motion. What people of anti-  
céleste corps en mouvement. peuple, m. art.  
quity ever had better laws than the Egyptians?  
a eu de loi, f. que Egyptien?

# AGREEMENT OF THE ADJECTIVE WITH THE SUBSTANTIVE.

103. RULE 1. The adjective always agrees in gender and number with the substantive to which it relates : as,

de *beaux* jardins,                      *fine* gardens.  
de *belles* promenades,              *fine* walks.

104. RULE 2. When the adjective relates to two substantives singular of the same gender, it must be put in the plural, and agree with them in gender : as,

Le roi et le berger sont *égaux*      *The king and the shepherd are*  
après la mort.                      *equal after death.*

105. RULE 3. When two substantives, to which the adjective relates, are of different genders, the adjective is to be put in the masculine plural : as,

Mon père et ma mère sont      *My father and mother are con-*  
*contents.*                      *tented.*  
*Mon oncle et ma tante sont heureux*

## EXERCISE XVI.

These hills are covered with trees loaded with fruit already  
coteau, *m.*      couvert de arbre, *m.* chargé      *m. pl.* déjà  
ripe. A pure stream rolls its <sup>2</sup>limpid <sup>1</sup>water through the  
mur.      clair ruisseau, *m.* roule      limpide cristal      à  
midst of meadows enamelled with flowers. Every thing interests  
milieu      prairie, *f.* émaillé      fleur.      Tout intéresse  
the heart in this abode which is full of charms. Fly, <sup>2</sup>incon-  
cœur, *m.*      séjour, *m.* — — plein attrait. Fuyez, incon-  
siderate <sup>1</sup>youth, fly from the <sup>1</sup>enchancing <sup>2</sup>allurements of a <sup>2</sup>vain  
sidéré jeunesse, *f.* —      enchanteur attrait, *m.*  
<sup>1</sup>world : its <sup>2</sup>perfidious <sup>1</sup>sweets are a <sup>2</sup>slow <sup>1</sup>poison, which  
monde, *m.* ses perfide douceur, *f.*      lent *m.*  
would destroy in your soul the noble enthusiasm of  
détruirait dans âme, *f.*      enthousiasme, *m.* art.  
goodness, and the precious seeds of <sup>2</sup>sublime <sup>1</sup>virtues.  
bien, *m.*      germe, *m.* art.      art.  
Uprightness and piety are much esteemed, even by the  
Droiture, *f.* art. piété, *f.* très estimé, même de  
wicked. A man in <sup>3</sup>the <sup>4</sup>most <sup>5</sup>elevated, and  
méchant, *pl.* — art. dans élevé, <sup>1</sup>art. <sup>2</sup>état  
a man in <sup>3</sup>the <sup>4</sup>most <sup>5</sup>obscure <sup>2</sup>situation, are equally  
— art.      obscur <sup>1</sup>art. état, *m.* également

precious in the eyes of God. Pilpay and Confucius are very  
 celebrated among the nations of Asia. His probity and  
 disinterestedness are known every where. The love of life,  
 and the fear of death are natural to man.  
 Ignorance and self-love are equally presumptuous. My  
 sister and brother were very attentive to the instructions of  
 their masters.

## NUMBERS.

106. Numbers are divided into six classes, viz.: *Cardinal, Ordinal, Collective, Adverbial, Distributive, and Proportional.*

<i>Nombres</i> <i>Cardinaux.</i>	Cardinal Numbers.	<i>Nombres</i> <i>Ordinaux.</i>	Ordinal Numbers.
un, une.....	1	premier, première.....	1 <sup>st</sup> .
deux.....	2	deuxième, second, seconde.....	2 <sup>d</sup> .
trois.....	3	troisième.....	3 <sup>d</sup> .
quatre.....	4	quatrième.....	4 <sup>th</sup> .
cinq.....	5	cinquième.....	5 <sup>th</sup> .
six.....	6	sixième.....	6 <sup>th</sup> .
sept.....	7	septième.....	7 <sup>th</sup> .
huit.....	8	huitième.....	8 <sup>th</sup> .
neuf.....	9	neuvième.....	9 <sup>th</sup> .
dix.....	10	dixième.....	10 <sup>th</sup> .
onze.....	11	onzième.....	11 <sup>th</sup> .
douze.....	12	douzième.....	12 <sup>th</sup> .
treize.....	13	treizième.....	13 <sup>th</sup> .
quatorze.....	14	quatorzième.....	14 <sup>th</sup> .
quinze.....	15	quinzième.....	15 <sup>th</sup> .
seize.....	16	seizième.....	16 <sup>th</sup> .
dix-sept.....	17	dix-septième.....	17 <sup>th</sup> .
dix-huit.....	18	dix-huitième.....	18 <sup>th</sup> .
dix-neuf.....	19	dix-neuvième.....	19 <sup>th</sup> .
vingt.....	20	vingtième.....	20 <sup>th</sup> .
vingt et un.....	21	vingt et unième.....	21 <sup>st</sup> .
vingt-deux, &c.....	22	vingt-deuxième, &c.....	22 <sup>d</sup> .
trente.....	30	trentième.....	30 <sup>th</sup> .
trente et un, &c.....	31	trente et unième, &c.....	31 <sup>st</sup> .
quarante.....	40	quarantième.....	40 <sup>th</sup> .
quarante et un, &c.....	41	quarante et unième, &c.....	41 <sup>st</sup> .
cinquante.....	50	cinquantième.....	50 <sup>th</sup> .
cinquante et un, &c.....	51	cinquante et unième, &c.....	51 <sup>st</sup> .
soixante.....	60	soixantième.....	60 <sup>th</sup> .
soixante et un, &c.....	61	soixante et unième, &c.....	61 <sup>st</sup> .
soixante et dix.....	70	soixante et dixième.....	70 <sup>th</sup> .
soixante et onze.....	71	soixante et onzième.....	71 <sup>st</sup> .
soixante-douze, &c.....	72	soixante-douzième, &c.....	72 <sup>d</sup> .
quatre-vingt.....	80	quatre-vingtième.....	80 <sup>th</sup> .



<i>Nombres</i> <i>Cardinaux.</i>	Cardinal Numbers.
quatre-vingt-un, &c. ....	81
quatre-vingt-dix .....	90
quatre-vingt-onze, &c. ....	91
cent .....	100
cent-un, &c. ....	101
deux cents .....	200
mille .....	1,000
deux mille, &c. ....	2,000
dix mille .....	10,000
million .....	1,000,000

<i>Nombres</i> <i>Collectifs.</i>	Collective Numbers.
une couple .....	<i>a couple.</i>
une demi douzaine .....	<i>half a dozen.</i>
une huitaine .....	<i>a week.</i>
une neuvaïne .....	<i>nine days of prayer.</i>
une dizaine .....	<i>half a score.</i>
une douzaine .....	<i>a dozen.</i>
deux douzaines, &c. ....	<i>two dozen, &amp;c.</i>
une quinzaine .....	<i>a fortnight.</i>
une douzaine et } demie, &c. }	{ <i>a dozen and a</i> <i>half, &amp;c.</i>
une vingtaine .....	<i>a score.</i>
une trentaine, } &c. }	{ <i>a score and a</i> <i>half, &amp;c.</i>
une centaine .....	<i>five score.</i>
un millier .....	<i>one thousand.</i>
deux milliers, &c. ....	<i>two thousand, &amp;c.</i>

<i>Nombres</i> <i>Adverbiaux.</i>	Adverbial Numbers.
premièrement .....	<i>first.</i>
en premier lieu .....	<i>in the first place.</i>
secondement .....	<i>secondly.</i>
troisièmement .....	<i>thirdly.</i>
quatrièmement .....	<i>fourthly.</i>
cinquièmement, &c. ....	<i>fifthly, &amp;c.</i>

<i>Nombres</i> <i>Ordinaux.</i>	Ordinal Numbers.
quatre-vingt-unième, &c. ....	81 <sup>st</sup> .
quatre-vingt-dixième .....	90 <sup>th</sup> .
quatre-vingt-onzième, &c. ....	91 <sup>st</sup> .
centième .....	100 <sup>th</sup> .
cent-unième, &c. ....	101 <sup>st</sup> .
deux centième .....	200 <sup>th</sup> .
millième .....	1000 <sup>th</sup> .
deux millième, &c. ....	2000 <sup>th</sup> .
dix millième .....	10,000 <sup>th</sup> .
millionième .....	million <sup>th</sup> .

<i>Nombres</i> <i>Distributifs.</i>	Distributive Numbers.
la moitié .....	<i>the half.</i>
un tiers .....	<i>one third.</i>
deux tiers .....	<i>two thirds.</i>
un quart .....	<i>one quarter.</i>
deux quarts .....	<i>two quarters.</i>
un cinquième .....	<i>one fifth.</i>
deux cinquièmes .....	<i>two fifths.</i>
un sixième .....	<i>one sixth.</i>
deux sixièmes .....	<i>two sixths.</i>
un septième .....	<i>one seventh.</i>
deux septièmes, &c. ....	<i>two sevenths, &amp;c.</i>

<i>Nombres</i> <i>Proportionnels.</i>	Proportional Numbers.
double .....	<i>double.</i>
triple .....	<i>triple.</i>
quadruple .....	<i>fourfold.</i>
quintuple .....	<i>fivefold.</i>
sextuple .....	<i>sixfold.</i>
septuple .....	<i>sevenfold.</i>
octuple .....	<i>eightfold.</i>
nonuple .....	<i>ninefold.</i>
décuple, &c. ....	<i>tenfold, &amp;c.</i>
centuple, &c. ....	<i>hundredfold, &amp;c.</i>

107. When mentioning the days of the month, the French make use of the cardinal instead of the ordinal number, and say, *le onze d'Avril*, not *le onzième*, &c.; except, however, that instead of *l'un du mois*, they say, *le premier du mois*, the first day of the month.

108. *Mille* never takes *s* in the plural; thus, *vingt mille*, is twenty thousand, and not *vingt milles*, which would mean twenty miles; and when mentioning the Christian era, they curtail this word into *mil*, and write, for example, *l'an mil huit cent trente huit*, and never *l'an mille*, &c.

109. There are many other numerical expressions,

*C'est le vingt-six de Juin*

used in poetry, music, games, &c.: as, *distique, tercet, quatrain, sixain, huitain, &c.*; *solo, duo, trio, quatuor, quinte, octave. &c.*; *beset, sonnez, &c.*

## CHAPTER IV.

### OF THE PRONOUN.

110. A pronoun is a word substituted for a noun.

111. There are six kinds of pronouns: the *Personal, Possessive, Relative, Absolute, Demonstrative, and Indefinite.*

### SECTION I.

#### OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

112. *Personal Pronouns* are used for the names of persons, or things.

	Subject.	Object.		Subject.		Object.
Singular.	je	te	connais,	<i>I</i>	<i>know</i>	<i>thee.</i>
	tu	me	conduis,	<i>thou</i>	<i>leadest</i>	<i>me.</i>
	il	le	voit,	<i>he</i>	<i>sees</i>	<i>him.</i>
	elle, f.	la	cherche,	<i>she</i>	<i>seeks</i>	<i>her.</i>
Plural.	nous	vous	croyons,	<i>we</i>	<i>believe</i>	<i>you.</i>
	vous	nous	persuadez,	<i>you</i>	<i>persuade</i>	<i>us.</i>
	ils	les	punissent,	<i>they</i>	<i>punish</i>	<i>them.</i>
	elles, f.	les	admirent,	<i>they</i>	<i>admire</i>	<i>them.</i>

113. The pronouns *me* and *te*, are changed into *moi* and *toi*, when put after the verb: as, *crois-moi, je te connais, toi et ton frère*;

114. And also when put before it, to give more strength to the phrase: as, *moi, je dis*; *toi, tu ne vois rien.*

115. When the verb has no regimen direct, the objective pronouns, *le, la, les*, are changed thus:

Subject.	Object.		Subject.		Object.
je	<i>lui</i>	parle (à lui),	<i>I</i>	<i>speak</i>	<i>to him.</i>
je	<i>lui</i>	donne (à elle),	<i>I</i>	<i>give</i>	<i>to her.</i>
je	<i>leur</i>	écris (à eux, or à elles),	<i>I</i>	<i>write</i>	<i>to them</i>



116. The same pronouns, *le, la, les*, when put after the verb, are changed thus :

Je le félicite, <i>lui</i> et ses amis.	<i>I congratulate him, and his friends.</i>
Je la vois, <i>elle</i> et ses enfants.	<i>I see her, and her children.</i>
Je les méprise, <i>eux</i> (or <i>elles</i> ) et leurs complices.	<i>I despise them, and their accomplices.</i>

## EXERCISE XVII.

I cast my eyes upon the objects which <sup>2</sup>surrounded <sup>1</sup>me, and  
 portai vue, *f.* objet qui environnaient me, je  
 saw with pleasure that all was calm and tranquil. My father is  
 vis que était calme tranquille.  
 satisfied with me. We have told the truth. If we desire to  
 content de avons dit vérité, *f.* désirons  
 be happy, we must not deviate from the path of  
 devons nous écarter sentier, *m.* art.  
 virtue. Thou art greater than I, and from thee I have  
*f.* es moi, toi  
<sup>2</sup>at once <sup>1</sup>learned humility and wisdom. I was telling  
 en même temps appris art. *f.* art. *f.* disais  
 thee that dancing is to the body what taste is to the  
 te que art. danse, *f.* *m.* ce que art. *m.*  
 mind. You <sup>2</sup>have <sup>3</sup>shown <sup>1</sup>us great talents; when <sup>2</sup>will  
 montré de *m.* quand mon-  
 you show <sup>1</sup>us great virtues? How <sup>3</sup>amiable <sup>1</sup>you <sup>2</sup>are! How  
 trerez-vous Que êtes!  
 good you are to have thought of us! It was said of you the  
 de vous être occupé ..on disait..  
 other day, that you intended to spend a winter in London,  
 autre jour, vous vous proposiez de passer *m.* à Londres,  
 in order to see every thing <sup>5</sup>curious <sup>1</sup>which <sup>2</sup>that <sup>3</sup>city <sup>4</sup>presents.  
 ...pour... voir tout ce que ville offre de.  
 You will go with him. They received kindly neither him  
 irez On ne nous accueillit ni  
 nor me. You <sup>2</sup>blame <sup>1</sup>them, they who have <sup>2</sup>only <sup>1</sup>followed  
 ni blâmez qui ne ont que suivi  
 your counsels. When I <sup>2</sup>saw <sup>1</sup>them, they were at home.  
 conseil. Lorsque vis étaient chez elles.

117. The pronouns *elle, elles, eux, lui, leur*, used as regimen indirect, generally apply to persons only.

118. When speaking of things, these pronouns are to be replaced by *en* and *y*, which are used both for persons and things. Thus, we say, in speaking

*of a poet :* Que pensez-vous de lui ? *What do you think of him ?*  
*of his works :* Qu' en pensez vous ? *What do you think of them ?*  
*of a woman :* Je m' approchai d' elle. *I approached her.*  
*of a table :* Je m' en approchai. *I approached it.*  
*of men :* Je parlais d' eux. *I was speaking of them.*  
*of books :* J' en parlais. *I was speaking of them.*  
*of women :* Je pensais à elles. *I was thinking of them.*  
*of flowers :* J' y pensais. *I was thinking of them.*

119. *Y* and *en* are always put before the verb, except with the imperative affirmative.

120. The pronoun *se*, of the third person, and common to both numbers and genders, is used for the conjugation of pronominal verbs : as,

Il <i>se</i> donne des louanges.	<i>He gives himself praises.</i>
Elle <i>se</i> flatte.	<i>She flatters herself.</i>
Ils <i>se</i> sont déshonorés.	<i>They have disgraced themselves.</i>
Elles <i>se</i> sont flattées.	<i>They have flattered themselves.</i>

121. *Se* is always put before the verb.

122. *Soi*, pronoun singular of the third person, and of both genders, is generally used in phrases where there is an indeterminate pronoun either expressed or understood : as,

Chacun tire à <i>soi</i> .	<i>Every one draws to himself.</i>
N' aimer que <i>soi</i> , c' est n' être bon à rien.	<i>To love only ourselves, is to be good for nothing.</i>

123. *Soi* may also apply to things : as,

Le vice est odieux de <i>soi</i> .	<i>Vice is odious in itself.</i>
La vertu est aimable en <i>soi</i> .	<i>Virtue is amiable in itself.</i>

### EXERCISE XVIII.

They speak a great deal of it.	That is a <sup>2</sup> delicate <sup>1</sup> affair; the
On .. beaucoup ..	Ce
success, of it is doubtful.	This tree is very high; do not
succès, <i>m.</i> douteux.	arbre, <i>m.</i> haut; —
<sup>2</sup> climb upon 'it to gather its fruit, you would fall.	See
montez — y pour en cueillir les	tomberiez. Voyez

them; I <sup>2</sup>consent to <sup>1</sup>it, but do not trust them. That is a fine  
*..consens.. — vous fiez y. Ce*  
 appointment: he had <sup>4</sup>long <sup>2</sup>aspired to <sup>1</sup>it. In a thousand  
*charge, f. — <sup>3</sup>depuis long-temps ..aspirait.. — mille*  
 instances we do not watch sufficiently over ourselves. The glory  
*occasions on — veille assez sur soi. f.*  
 of the world passes away in an instant. He gives himself a great  
*m. se évanouit en donne se*  
 deal of trouble. She tires herself. People should very seldom  
*peine. lasse se. On doit rarement.*  
 speak of themselves. We must take upon ourselves the care  
*On doit sur soin, m.*  
 of our own affairs. We must help one another; it is the law  
*ses propres affaires. ..Il faut.. ..se entr'aider;... ce*  
 of nature.

## SECTION II.

## OF THE POSSESSIVE PRONOUN.

124. Possessive pronouns mark the possession of persons or things which they represent. Some relate to one person, and others to several persons.

125. Those which relate to one person, are :

<i>m. sing.</i>	<i>f. sing.</i>	<i>m. plur.</i>	<i>f. plur.</i>	
1st. le mien,	la mienne,	les miens,	les miennes,	<i>mine.</i>
2d. le tien,	la tienne,	les tiens,	les tiennes,	<i>thine.</i>
3d. le sien,	la sienne,	les siens,	les siennes,	<i>his, hers, its.</i>

126. Those which relate to several persons, are :

	<i>m. sing.</i>	<i>f. sing.</i>	<i>pl. m. &amp; f.</i>	
1st.	le nôtre,	la nôtre,	les nôtres,	<i>ours.</i>
2d.	le vôtre,	la vôtre,	les vôtres,	<i>yours.</i>
3d.	le leur,	la leur,	les leurs,	<i>theirs.</i>

The following are examples :

Votre père et *le mien* étaient *Your father and mine were*  
*amis. friends.*  
 C'est votre avantage et *le nôtre.* *It is your advantage and*  
*ours.*

## EXERCISE XIX.

Is it your temper or hers, that <sup>2</sup>hinders <sup>1</sup>you from living well  
*ce humeur, f. qui empêche de vivre*

together? If it be yours, it <sup>2</sup>is <sup>3</sup>easy for <sup>1</sup>you to remedy it,  
ensemble? ce est il aisé — de porter remède y,  
by mastering your temper: if it be hers, redouble your em-  
en . . . prenant sur vous même : . . . redoublez de —

plaisance, attention, and good behaviour; it is very seldom  
de de procédé, *m. pl.* il très rare  
that this method proves unsuccessful. If my friends had served  
moyen, *m.* . . . ne réussisse pas . . . avaient servi

me with the same zeal as yours, it is very certain that I  
zèle, *m.* que il très sûr  
should have succeeded: but yours have been all fire, and mine all  
. . . aurais . . . réussi: été de

ice. All the pictures which we expected from Rome are  
de glace. tableaux, *m.* attendions

arrived: there are some that are a little damaged; but yours, his,  
arrivés: . . . il y en a . . . qui peu endommagés;

and mine, are in good condition. We know perfectly well what  
en état, *m.* savons — quels

are your amusements in town, and I assure you we are  
à *art. f.* assure que sommes

very far from <sup>3</sup>envying <sup>1</sup>you <sup>2</sup>them; but if you knew ours  
bien éloignés envier connaissiez

in the country, it is most likely you would not be long  
à campagne, *f.* il y a toute apparence que . . . ne tarderiez pas . .

in <sup>2</sup>giving <sup>1</sup>them the preference. You have opened your heart to me  
à donner leur *f.* ouvert

with that noble frankness which <sup>2</sup>so <sup>3</sup>well <sup>1</sup>becomes an honest man:  
franchise, *f.* qui sied à honnête

this confidence <sup>2</sup>well <sup>1</sup>deserves mine.  
confiance, *f.* mérite

### SECTION III.

#### OF THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

127. Relative pronouns are those which relate to a pre-  
ceding noun, or pronoun, called the *antecedent*. In the  
phrase, *l'homme qui joue*, the man who plays, *qui* relates  
to the substantive *homme*: *l'homme* is then the *antecedent*  
to the pronoun relative *qui*.

qui,	{	<i>who</i> :	Dieu <i>qui</i> voit	<i>God who sees</i>
			tout.	<i>every thing.</i>
		<i>which</i> :	Les chevaux <i>qui</i>	<i>The horses which</i>
			courent.	<i>are running.</i>



wrote <sup>2</sup>last <sup>1</sup>year has answered me this morning. She  
 écrivis art. dernière année répondu matin, m.  
 will not hear of the lady whom he is going to marry.  
 veut entendre parler ....va.... épouser.  
 Shun vice, and love that which is just. Men <sup>2</sup>generally  
 Evitez art. m. aimez juste. art.  
<sup>1</sup>I love him who <sup>2</sup>flatters <sup>1</sup>them. Do <sup>2</sup>you <sup>1</sup>speak of the lady whose  
 aiment celui flatte — parlez  
 husband is so avaricious? There is nothing for which he <sup>2</sup>is <sup>1</sup>not  
 mari avare? Il ne y a rien à soit ne  
 fit. Lying is a vice for which young people  
 propre. art. mensonge, m. m. pour art. gens  
 ought to have the greatest horror. The table upon which you  
 doivent avoir horreur, f. f.  
 write is broken.  
 écrivez cassé.

### SECTION IV.

#### OF THE ABSOLUTE PRONOUNS.

130. Absolute pronouns are those which have no antecedent. They are the five following :

qui,	who:	Je vous dirai qui l'	I will tell you who
		a fait.	has done it.
	whom:	Qui consulterez-	Whom will you con-
		vous?	sult?
que,	what:	Que ferez-vous?	What will you do?
quoi,	what:	En quoi puis-je vous servir?	In what can I serve you?
quel,	what:	Il ne sait quel parti prendre.	He does not know what part to take.
lequel,	which:	Lequel aimez-vous le mieux?	Which do you like best?

131. Qui applies only to persons. *Qui est là?*

132. Que and quoi relate to things only. *Qu'est-ce? De quoi?*

133. Quel, masc., quelle, fem. sing.; quels, masc. quelles, fem. plur., always precede a substantive, and take its gender and number.

134. Lequel, duquel, auquel, &c., are used to mark a distinction between several persons or objects.

*De quel pays venez-vous? Par quel chemin?*

## EXERCISE XXI.

Who can give credit to a young man who does not speak the  
 peut ajouter foi — dit  
 truth? Of whom were you speaking, when I came? To whom  
 vérité, f. ...parliez-vous... vins?  
 have you lent my slate? Whom do you seek? What  
 avez prêté ardoise? f. — cherchez?  
 are you doing? What do <sup>3</sup>you <sup>2</sup>ask of <sup>1</sup>me? What is  
 ...faites-vous?... — demandez —  
 the name of your father? In what city does he live? Of what  
 nom, m. Dans f. demeure-t-il?  
 are you speaking? What is the country in which he was born?  
 ...parlez-vous?... pays, m. dans est né?  
 There is in that affair I know not what that I do not understand.  
 ...Il y a... dans f. sais entend.

## SECTION V.

## OF THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

135. Demonstrative pronouns are those which indicate, in a precise manner, the persons or things which they represent. They are :

s. m.	s. f.		pl. m.	pl. f.	
ce,	ce,	<i>this, or that ;</i>	ce,	ce,	<i>these.</i>
celui,	celle,	<i>this, or that ;</i>	ceux,	celles,	<i>these, or those.</i>
celui-ci,	celle-ci,	<i>this ;</i>	ceux-ci,	celles-ci,	<i>these.</i>
celui-là,	celle-là,	<i>that ;</i>	ceux-là,	celles-là,	<i>those.</i>
ceci,	<i>no fem.</i>	<i>this.</i>	} These have no plural.		
cela,	<i>no fem.</i>	<i>that.</i>			

136. *Ce* is of both genders and both numbers : as,

Est-ce là votre plume ? *Is this your pen ?*  
 Sont-ce là vos livres ? *Are these your books ?*

137. *Celui, celle ; ceux, celles*, when followed by the preposition *de*, are rendered into English by *that, those* : as,

Cette montre ressemble à celle  
 de votre frère. *This watch is like that of your brother.*  
 Vos livres, et ceux de votre  
 sœur, sont déchirés. *Your books, and those of your sister, are torn.*

138. When followed by a pronoun relative, these pronouns are expressed, in English, by *he, she, they, him, her, them, that, those* : as,



*Celui* qui pratique la vertu vit heureux.

Vous punissez *celui* qui n'est pas coupable.

*He* who practises virtue lives happy.

You punish him who is not guilty.

139. *Celui-ci*, and *celui-là*, adopt the gender and number of the substantives whose place they supply. When opposed to each other, *celui-ci* marks the nearest object, and *celui-là* the remotest: as,

*Celui-ci* plaît, mais *celui-là* captive.

*This* pleases, but *that* captivates.

140. *Ceci* and *cela* apply only to things. They may be used singly; but when they are opposed to each other, *ceci* expresses the nearest object, and *cela* the remotest: as,

Je n'aime point *ceci*, donnez-moi *cela*.

*I* do not like *this*, give me *that*.

## EXERCISE XXII.

The disorders of the mind are more dangerous than those of the  
maladie, *f*.

body. Gentleness, affability, and a certain urbanity, distinguish  
*art.* douceur, *f.* *art.* *f.* distinguent

the man that frequents polite company; these are marks  
vit dans *art.* grand monde, *m.* *art.* *f.*

by which he is known. He that <sup>2</sup>suffers <sup>1</sup>himself to be ruled by his  
auxquelles on le reconnaît. laisse se ..dominer..

passions must renounce happiness. You have punished him  
doit renoncer à *art.* bonheur, *m.* puni

who did not <sup>2</sup>deserve <sup>1</sup>it, and rewarded her who was guilty. We  
— méritait le, récompensé

ought to pray for them who <sup>2</sup>persecute <sup>1</sup>us. Of all virtues, that  
devons prier persécutent *f*

which <sup>2</sup>most <sup>1</sup>distinguishes a Christian, is charity. I have  
le plus distingue ce *art.* *f.*

seen the <sup>3</sup>king's <sup>1</sup>palace, and that of the queen. That gold  
<sup>2</sup>*art.* palais, *m.*

watch which you have shown me, is not yours, it is that of your  
montre, *f.* que montrée ce

brother. The body perishes, the soul is immortal; yet all  
périt, immortel; cependant

our cares are for that, while we neglect this. This is low  
soins, *m.* tandis que négligeons bas

and mean, but that is grand and sublime.  
rampant,



## SECTION VI.

## OF THE INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

141. Indefinite pronouns are those which express, in an indefinite or general manner, the persons or things which they represent. These are :

on,	<i>one :</i>	<i>On aime à se flatter.</i>	<i>One is apt to flatter one's self.</i>
	<i>somebody :</i>	<i>On frappe à la porte.</i>	<i>Somebody knocks at the door.</i>
	<i>people :</i>	<i>On dit tout haut.</i>	<i>People say openly.</i>
	<i>we, or they :</i>	<i>Si *l' on vous blâme, on a tort.</i>	<i>If they blame you, they are wrong.</i>
quiconque,	<i>whoever :</i>	<i>Quiconque est riche est tout.</i>	<i>Whoever is rich is every thing.</i>
quelqu'un,	<i>somebody :</i>	<i>Quelqu'un m' a dit.</i>	<i>Somebody has told me.</i>
chacun,	<i>every one :</i>	<i>Chacun s' en plaint.</i>	<i>Every one complains of him.</i>
autrui,	<i>others :</i>	<i>Ne faites pas à autrui, ce que vous ne voudriez pas qu' on vous fit.</i>	<i>Do not do to others what you would not they should do to you.</i>
personne,	<i>nobody.</i>	<i>La fierté ne convient à personne.</i>	<i>Pride becomes nobody.</i>
autre,	<i>other :</i>	<i>Je vous prenais pour un autre.</i>	<i>I took you for another.</i>
tel,	<i>such :</i>	<i>On ne vit jamais rien de tel.</i>	<i>No such thing was ever seen.</i>
l' un et l' autre,	<i>both :</i>	<i>L' un et l' autre sont bons.</i>	<i>Both are good.</i>
tout,	<i>every thing :</i>	<i>Tout nous abandonne.</i>	<i>Every thing forsakes us.</i>

## EXERCISE XXIII.

If you behave yourself in that manner, what will <sup>2</sup>people <sup>1</sup>say of you ?  
vous conduisez .....ainsi..... — on dira-t-

They write me word from Ispahan that thou hast left Persia,  
écrit — as quitté art. Perse,f.

and art now at Paris. One can not read Télé-  
que tu es actuellement à peut lire Télé-

machus, without becoming better: we there find every where a  
maque, devenir meilleur: on y trouve ...partout...

mild philosophy, <sup>2</sup>noble <sup>3</sup>and <sup>4</sup>elevated <sup>1</sup>sentiments; we there find  
f. des voit

\* This *l'* is placed between the two vowels for the sake of euphony  
It has no other use.

in every line the effusions of a noble soul, and we admire  
à chaque ligne épanchement beau f. des  
precepts calculated to effect the happiness of the world. This  
propre faire m. m.  
speech is addressed to whoever is guilty. Somebody has come  
discours, m. ..s' adresse.. est venu  
to <sup>2</sup>speak to <sup>1</sup>you. Every one should, for the sake of his own  
pour — devrait, — — — propre  
happiness, listen only to the voice of reason and of  
m. ne écouter que — voix, f. art. f. art.  
truth. He sees the faults of others, but he <sup>4</sup>never mentions  
f. remarque défauts ...ne <sup>2</sup>en  
them. Nobody is certain of living till to-morrow. Do not  
parle. ne assuré vivre —  
speak ill of other people, if you wish that nobody should speak  
parlez mal voulez ne ....parle....  
ill of you. Both serve to the same purpose. You cannot per-  
servent usage, m. ne sauriez per-  
suade me of any such thing. All is in God, and God is in all.  
suauder — rien de — en

## CHAPTER V.

### OF THE VERB.

See Introduction, pp. 19—22.

142. The verb expresses the action, or the state of the *subject*. When it expresses an action, the person or thing affected by such action is called the *object*.

143. Thus: *Pierre punit Jean*, Peter punishes John. Here *John* is the *object*, because he suffers the action which *Peter* performs: *Peter* is the *subject*; and *punishes* is the verb.

144. When the verb expresses a state, the word which marks that state is called the *attribute*: as, *Pierre dort* (*Pierre est dormant*), Peter is sleeping. Here, *sleeping* is the *attribute*, because it marks the state in which Peter is.

145. The *object*, when spoken of in its connexion with verbs, is more properly termed the *regimen*. There are two sorts of *regimen* · the *direct*, and *indirect*.

146. The regimen direct is so called, because it completes the signification of the verb without the help of any other word : as, *Pierre écrit une lettre*, Peter writes a letter.

147. The regimen indirect is that which cannot complete the signification of the verb without the aid of a preposition : as, *Pierre nuit à Jean*, Peter hurts John.

148. All the neuter verbs have only one regimen—the *indirect*. There are many active verbs which have both regimens : as *il a fait un présent à sa sœur*, he has made a present to his sister.

149. Though the greater part of the French verbs are *regular*, there are, as in other languages, some that are *irregular*, and others that are *defective*. *Regular* verbs are those which are conjugated conformably to a general standard ; *irregular* verbs are those which do not conform to a general standard ; and *defective* verbs are those which want certain tenses, or persons.

### OF CONJUGATIONS.

150. To conjugate a verb, is to rehearse it with all its different inflections.

151. The French have four conjugations ; which are easily distinguished by the termination of the present tense of the infinitive mood. The

*First ends in -er, as, parler, aimer, donner, &c.*

*Second . . . . . -ir, .. finir, sentir, ouvrir, &c.*

*Third . . . . . -eoir, recevoir, apercevoir, &c.*

*Fourth . . . . . -re, .. rendre, plaie, &c.*

152. The French, like most modern nations, not having a sufficient number of inflections in their verbs to represent the great variety of their tenses, supply this deficiency by the aid of two auxiliary verbs, *avoir*, to have, and *être*, to be.

153. Those tenses in a verb which are formed by inflections of the present tense of the infinitive mood (which is called the root of the verb) are called *simple tenses*, and, of course, are always expressed by a *single word*. But

those which are formed by the union of the tenses of the verbs *avoir* or *être* with a participle past, are called *compound tenses*. Thus: *avoir*, *j' ai*, &c.; *parler*, *je parle*, &c., are simple tenses: but *avoir eu*, *j' ai eu*; *avoir parlé*, *j' ai parlé*, &c., are compound tenses.

*Note.*—In the conjugations of the verbs in this Grammar, the *simple* tenses are placed in the left, and the *compound* tenses in the right hand column.

## CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB AVOIR, TO HAVE, IN THE FOUR FORMS.

### 1. AFFIRMATIVE FORM.

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PAST.
<i>avoir</i> .....to have	<i>avoir eu</i> .....to have had

#### PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.	PAST.
<i>ayant</i> .....having	<i>ayant eu</i> .....having had
PAST.	
<i>eu, m.; eue, f.</i> .....had	

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PRETERIT INDEFINITE.
<i>j' ai</i> .....I have	<i>j' ai eu</i> .....I have had
<i>tu as</i> .....thou hast	<i>tu as eu</i> .....thou hast had
<i>il a</i> .....he has	<i>il a eu</i> .....he has had
<i>nous avons</i> .....we have	<i>nous avons eu</i> .....we have had
<i>vous avez</i> .....you have	<i>vous avez eu</i> .....you have had
<i>ils ont</i> .....they have	<i>ils ont eu</i> .....they have had

IMPERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.
<i>j' avais</i> .....I had	<i>j' avais eu</i> .....I had had
<i>tu avais</i> .....thou hadst	<i>tu avais eu</i> .....thou hadst had
<i>il avait</i> .....he had	<i>il avait eu</i> .....he had had
<i>nous avions</i> .....we had	<i>nous avions eu</i> .....we had had
<i>vous aviez</i> .....you had	<i>vous aviez eu</i> .....you had had
<i>ils avaient</i> .....they had	<i>ils avaient eu</i> .....they had had

PRETERIT DEFINITE.	PRETERIT ANTERIOR.
<i>j' eus</i> .....I had	<i>j' eus eu</i> .....I had had
<i>tu eus</i> .....thou hadst	<i>tu eus eu</i> .....thou hadst had
<i>il eut</i> .....he had	<i>il eut eu</i> .....he had had
<i>nous eûmes</i> .....we had	<i>nous eûmes eu</i> .....we had had
<i>vous eûtes</i> .....you had	<i>vous eûtes eu</i> .....you had had
<i>ils eurent</i> .....they had	<i>ils eurent eu</i> .....they had had

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

j'aurai . . . . . I shall have  
tu auras . . . . . thou shalt have  
il aura . . . . . he shall have  
nous aurons . . . . . we shall have  
vous aurez . . . . . you shall have  
ils auront . . . . . they shall have

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

j' aurai eu..... *I shall have had*  
 tu auras eu..... *thou shalt have had*  
 il aura eu..... *he shall have had*  
 nous aurons eu..... *we shall have had*  
 vous aurez eu..... *you shall have had*  
 ils auront eu..... *they shall have had*

### CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

PRESENT.  
 j' aurais . . . . . *I should have*  
 tu aurais . . . . . *thou shouldst have*  
 il aurait . . . . . *he should have*  
 nous aurions . . . . *we should have*  
 vous auriez . . . . . *you should have*  
 ils auraient . . . . . *they should have*

PAST.\*

j' aurais eu..... *I should have had*  
tu aurais eu..... *thou shouldst have had*  
il aurait eu..... *he should have had*  
nous aurions eu..... *we should have had*  
vous auriez eu..... *you should have had*  
ils auraient eu..... *they should have had*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

aie.....	have (thou)
qu' il ait.....	let him have
ayons.....	let us have
ayez.....	have (you)
qu' ils aient.....	let them have

### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

que j' aie..... *that I may have*  
que tu aies... *that thou mayst have*  
qu' il ait..... *that he may have*  
que nous ayons... *that we may have*  
que vous ayez... *that you may have*  
qu' ils aient... *that they may have*

PRETERIT.

que j' aie eu . . . . . *that I may have had*  
 que tu aies eu . . . *that thou mayst have had*  
 qu' il ait eu . . . . . *that he may have had*  
 que nous ayons eu . . *that we may have had*  
 que vous ayez eu . . *that you may have had*  
 qu' ils aient eu . . . *that they may have had*

IMPERFECT.

que j' eusse . . . . . *that I might have*  
 que tu eusses . . . . . *that thou mightst have*  
 qu'il eût . . . . . *that he might have*  
 que nous eussions . . . . . *that we might*  
   *[have]*  
 que vous eussiez . . . . . *that you might*  
   *[have]*  
 qu'ils eussent . . . . . *that they might have*

PLUPERFECT.

que j' eusse eu.....*that I might*  
 que tu eusses eu....*that thou mightst*  
 qu' il eût eu.....*that he might*  
 que nous eussions eu...*that we might*  
 que vous eussiez eu...*that you might*  
 qu' ils eussent eu ....*that they might*

## 2. NEGATIVE FORM.

### INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

ne pas avoir.....not to have

PAST.

n'avoir pas eu.....*not to have h*

## PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

n' ayant pas. . . . . *not having*

PAST.

n' ayant pas eu..... *not having had*

\* *J' eusse eu, tu eusses eu, il eût eu, nous eussions eu, vous eussiez eu, ils eussent eu*, I should have had, thou shouldst have had, &c., is also used for the Past tense of the Conditional mood. This remark holds good for every verb.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

je n' ai pas.....*I have not*  
tu n' as pas.....*thou hast not*  
il n' a pas.....*he has not*  
nous n' avons pas....*we have not*  
vous n' avez pas....*you have not*  
ils n' ont pas.....*they have not*

IMPERFECT.

je n' avais pas..... *I had not*  
tu n' avais pas..... *thou hadst not*  
il n' avait pas..... *he had not*  
nous n' avions pas... *we had not*  
vous n' aviez pas... *you had not*  
ils n' avaient pas... *they had not*

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

je n' eus pas.....*I had not*  
tu n' eus pas.....*thou hadst not*  
il n' eut pas.....*he had not*  
nous n' eûmes pas.....*we had not*  
vous n' eûtes pas.....*you had not*  
ils n' eurent pas.....*they had not*

**FUTURE ABSOLUTE.**

je n' aurai pas . . . *I shall not have*  
tu n' auras pas . . . *thou shalt not have*  
il n' aura pas . . . *he shall not have*  
nous n' aurons pas . . . *we shall not have*  
vous n' aurez pas . . . *you shall not have*  
ils n' auront pas . . . *they shall not have*

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

je n' ai pas eu ..... *I have not had*  
tu n' as pas eu ..... *thou hast not had*  
il n' a pas eu ..... *he has not had*  
nous n' avons pas eu ..... *we have not had*  
vous n' avez pas eu ..... *you have not had*  
ils n' ont pas eu ..... *they have not had*

PLUPERFECT.

je n' avais pas eu..... *I had not had*  
tu n' avais pas eu..... *thou hadst not had*  
il n' avait pas eu..... *he had not had*  
nous n' avions pas eu..... *we had not had*  
vous n' aviez pas eu..... *you had not had*  
ils n' avaient pas eu..... *they had not had*

PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

je n' eus pas eu..... *I had not had*  
tu n' eus pas eu..... *thou hadst not had*  
il n' eut pas eu..... *he has not had*  
nous n' eûmes pas eu..... *we had not had*  
vous n' eûtes pas eu..... *you had not had*  
ils n' eurent pas eu..... *they had not had*

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

je n' aurai pas eu..... *I shall not*  
tu n' auras pas eu..... *thou shalt not*  
il n' aura pas eu..... *he shall not*  
nous n' aurons pas eu... *we shall not*  
vous n' aurez pas eu... *you shall not*  
ils n' auront pas eu... *they shall not*

*have had*

### CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

je n'aurais pas.....*I should*  
tu n'aurais pas.....*thou shouldst*  
il n'aurait pas.....*he should*  
nous n'aurions pas.....*we should*  
vous n'auriez pas.....*you should*  
ils n'auraient pas.....*they should*

} *not have*

PAST.\*

je n' aurais pas eu..... *I should not*  
 tu n' aurais pas eu..... *thou shouldst not*  
 il n' aurait pas eu..... *he should not*  
 nous n' aurions pas eu..... *we should not*  
 vous n' auriez pas eu..... *you should not*  
 ils n' auraient pas eu..... *they should not*

*have had*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

n' aie pas.....have not (thou)  
qu' il n' ait pas.....let him not have  
n' ayez pas.....let us not have  
n' ayez pas.....have not (you)  
qu' ils n' aient pas.....let them not have

### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

que je n' aie pas...that I may  
que tu n' aies pas...that thou }  
qu' il n' ait pas...[mayst he may  
que nous n' ayons pas...that we }  
que vous n' ayez pas...that you }  
qu'ils n'aient pas...that they may }

not have

PRETERIT.

que je n' aie pas eu.....*that I may*  
 que tu n' aies pas eu...*that thou mayst*  
 qu' il n' ait pas eu.....*that he may*  
 que nous n' ayons pas eu...*that we may*  
 que vous n' ayez pas eu...*that you may*  
 qu' ils n' aient pas eu...*that they may*

} *not have had*

\* Also, *je n' eusse pas eu, tu n' eusses pas eu, il n' eût pas eu, nous n' eussions pas eu, vous n' eussiez pas eu, ils n' eussent pas eu.*



## IMPERFECT.

que je n' eusse pas.....that I  
 que tu n' eusses pas.....that thou  
 qu' il n' eût pas.....that he  
 que nous n' eussions pas.....that we  
 que vous n' eussiez pas.....that you  
 qu' ils n' eussent pas.....that they

}  
 might not have

## PLUPERFECT.

que je n' eusse pas eu.....that I  
 que tu n' eusses pas eu.....that thou  
 qu' il n' eût pas eu.....that he  
 que nous n' eussions pas eu.....that we  
 que vous n' eussiez pas eu.....that you  
 qu' ils n' eussent pas eu.....that they

}  
 had  
 might not have

## 3. INTERROGATIVE FORM.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

ai-je.....have I  
 as-tu.....hast thou  
 a-t-il.....has he  
 avons-nous.....have we  
 avez-vous.....have you  
 ont-ils.....have they

## PRÆTERIT INDEFINITE.

ai-je eu.....have I had  
 as-tu eu.....hast thou had  
 a-t-il eu.....has he had  
 avons-nous eu.....have we had  
 avez-vous eu.....have you had  
 ont-ils eu.....have they had

## IMPERFECT.

avais-je.....had I  
 avais-tu.....hadst thou  
 avait-il.....had he  
 avions-nous.....had we  
 aviez-vous.....had you  
 avaient-ils.....had they

## PLUPERFECT.

avais-je eu.....had I had  
 avais-tu eu.....hadst thou had  
 avait-il eu.....had he had  
 avions-nous eu.....had we had  
 aviez-vous eu.....had you had  
 avaient-ils eu.....had they had

## PRÆTERIT DEFINITE.

eus-je.....had I  
 eus-tu.....hadst thou  
 eut-il.....had he  
 eûmes-nous.....had we  
 eûtes-vous.....had you  
 eurent-ils.....had they

## PRÆTERIT ANTERIOR.

eus-je eu.....had I had  
 eus-tu eu.....hadst thou had  
 eut-il eu.....had he had  
 eûmes-nous eu.....had we had  
 eûtes-vous eu.....had you had  
 eurent-ils eu.....had they had

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

aurai-je.....shall I have  
 auras-tu.....shalt thou have  
 aura-t-il.....shall he have  
 aurons-nous.....shall we have  
 aurez-vous.....shall you have  
 auront-ils.....shall they have

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

aurai-je eu.....shall I have had  
 auras-tu eu.....shalt thou have had  
 aura-t-il eu.....shall he have had  
 aurons-nous eu.....shall we have had  
 aurez-vous eu.....shall you have had  
 auront-ils eu.....shall they have had

## CONDITIONAL MOOD.

## PRESENT.

aurais-je.....should I have  
 aurais-tu.....shouldst thou have  
 aurait-il.....should he have  
 aurions-nous.....should we have  
 auriez-vous.....should you have  
 auraient-ils.....should they have

## PAST.\*

aurais-je eu.....should I have had  
 aurais-tu eu.....shouldst thou have had  
 aurait-il eu.....should he have had  
 aurions-nous eu.....should we have had  
 auriez-vous eu.....should you have had  
 auraient-ils eu.....should they have had

\* Also, eussé-je eu, eusses-tu eu, eût-il eu, eussions-nous eu, eussiez-vous eu, eussent-ils eu.



## 4. NEGATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE FORM.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

n' ai-je pas.....	have I not
n' as-tu pas.....	hast thou not
n' a-t-il pas.....	has he not
n' avons-nous pas....	have we not
n' avez-vous pas.....	have you not
n' out-ils pas.....	have they not

## IMPERFECT.

n' avais-je pas.....	had I not
n' avais-tu pas.....	hadst thou not
n' avait-il pas.....	had he not
n' avions-nous pas....	had we not
n' aviez-vous pas.....	had you not
n' avaient-ils pas....	had they not

## PRÉTERIT DEFINITE.

n' eus-je pas.....	had I not
n' eus-tu pas.....	hadst thou not
n' eut-il pas.....	had he not
n' eûmes-nous pas....	had we not
n' eûtes-vous pas....	had you not
n' eurent-ils pas....	had they not

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

n' aurai-je pas....	shall I not have
n' auras-tu pas	shalt thou not have
n' aura-t-il pas...	shall he not have
n' aurons-nous pas.	shall we not have
n' aurez-vous pas.	shall you not have
n' auront-ils pas.	shall they not have

## PRÉTERIT INDEFINITE.

n' ai-je pas eu.....	have I not had
n' as-tu pas eu.....	hast thou not had
n' a-t-il pas eu.....	has he not had
n' avons-nous pas eu....	have we not had
n' avez-vous pas eu.....	have you not had
n' ont-ils pas eu.....	have they not had

## IMPERFECT.

n' avais-je pas eu.....	had I not had
n' avais-tu pas eu.....	hadst thou not had
n' avait-il pas eu.....	had he not had
n' avions-nous pas eu....	had we not had
n' aviez-vous pas eu.....	had you not had
n' avaient-ils pas eu....	had they not had

## PRÉTERIT ANTERIOR.

n' eus-je pas eu.....	had I not had
n' eus-tu pas eu.....	hadst thou not had
n' eut-il pas eu.....	had he not had
n' eûmes-nous pas eu....	had we not had
n' eûtes-vous pas eu....	had you not had
n' eurent-ils pas eu....	had they not had

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

n' aurai-je pas eu....	shall I not have had
n' auras-tu pas eu.	shalt thou not have had
n' aura-t-il pas eu...	shall he not have had
n' aurons-nous pas eu.	shall we not have had
n' aurez-vous pas eu.	shall you not have had
n' auront-ils pas eu.	shall they not have had

## CONDITIONAL MOOD.

## PRESENT.

n' aurais-je pas....	should I not have
n' aurais-tu pas...	shouldst thou not
n' aurait-il pas....	should he not have
n' aurions-nous pas..	should we not
n' auriez-vous pas..	should you not
n' auraient-ils pas..	should they not

## PAST.\*

n' aurais-je pas eu.....	should I not
n' aurais-tu pas eu.....	shouldst thou not
n' aurait-il pas eu.....	should he not
n' aurions-nous pas eu....	should we not
n' auriez-vous pas eu.....	should you not
n' auraient-ils pas eu.....	should they not

} have had

## EXERCISE XXIV.

154. The substantive being taken in a partitive sense in this exercise, the article, where the adjective follows

\* Also, *n' eussé-je pas eu, n' eusses-tu pas eu, n' eût-il pas eu, n' eussions-nous pas eu, n' eussiez-vous pas eu, n' eussent-ils pas eu.*



they may have more condescension and <sup>2</sup>more <sup>3</sup>prepossessing  
 condescendance prévenant  
<sup>1</sup>manners. That I might have a sword, musket and pistols.  
 manière, *f.* épée, *f.* fusil, *m.* pistolet, *m.*  
 That we might have a knife, a spoon and a fork.  
 couteau, *m.* cuiller, *f.* fourchette, *f.*  
 That they might have had friendship and gratitude.  
 amitié, *f.* *f.*

## EXERCISE XXV.

We have not had generosity. They have not had money. He had  
*f.*  
 not a skilful gardener. I shall not have great business. You shall  
 habile *m.* affaires, *f.*  
 not have had <sup>2</sup>quiet <sup>1</sup>days. They should not have bad  
 tranquille *m.* mauvais  
 pictures. Have not such whims. Let them not have <sup>3</sup>so  
 tableau, *m.* caprice, *m.*  
<sup>4</sup>whimsical <sup>1a</sup> <sup>2</sup>project. That he may not have had perseverance.  
 bizarre projet, *m.* *f.*  
 Have we had <sup>2</sup>convenient <sup>1</sup>houses? Had she silk? Shall we have  
 commode *f.*  
<sup>2</sup>odoriferous <sup>1</sup>shrubs? Should you have good wine and <sup>2</sup>nice  
 odoriférant arbuste? *m.* fin  
<sup>1</sup>cordials? Have you not <sup>2</sup>indulgent <sup>1</sup>parents? Has she not had  
 liqueur? *f.* *m.*  
 contempt, and even hatred for that man? Have they not  
 mépris, *m.* même haine, *h. asp.*  
<sup>2</sup>inattentive <sup>1</sup>children? Has he not used <sup>2</sup>far-fetched <sup>1</sup>expres-  
 enfant? *m.* fait usage de recherché *f.*  
 sions? Had they not excellent models? Shall I not have sweet  
 modèle? *m.* con-  
 meats? Shall we not have a good preacher? Should she not  
 fitures? *f.* prédicateur?  
 have <sup>2</sup>clear <sup>3</sup>and <sup>4</sup>just <sup>1</sup>ideas? Would they not have had <sup>2</sup>more  
*f.*  
<sup>3</sup>extensive <sup>1</sup>knowledge?  
 étendu connaissances? *f.*

## CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB *ETRE*, TO BE.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

## PAST.

être ..... to be    avoir été ..... to have been

## PARTICIPLES.

## PRESENT.

étant.....being

## PAST.

été.....been

## PAST.

ayant été.....having been

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

je suis .....I am  
 tu es.....thou art  
 il est.....he is  
 nous sommes.....we are  
 vous êtes.....you are  
 ils sont.....they are

## PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

j' ai été.....I have been  
 tu as été.....thou hast been  
 il a été.....he has been  
 nous avons été.....we have been  
 vous avez été.....you have been  
 ils ont été.....they have been

## IMPERFECT.

j' étais.....I was  
 tu étais.....thou wast  
 il était.....he was  
 nous étions.....we were  
 vous étiez.....you were  
 ils étaient.....they were

## PLUPERFECT.

j' avais été.....I had been  
 tu avais été.....thou hadst been  
 il avait été.....he had been  
 nous avions été.....we had been  
 vous aviez été.....you had been  
 ils avaient été.....they had been

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.

je fus.....I was  
 tu fus.....thou wast  
 il fut.....he was  
 nous fûmes.....we were  
 vous fûtes.....you were  
 ils furent.....they were

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

j' eus été.....I had been  
 tu eus été.....thou hadst been  
 il eut été.....he had been  
 nous eûmes été.....we had been  
 vous eûtes été.....you had been  
 ils eurent été.....they had been

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

je serai.....I shall be  
 tu seras.....thou shalt be  
 il sera.....he shall be  
 nous serons.....we shall be  
 vous serez.....you shall be  
 ils seront.....they shall be

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

j' aurai été.....I shall have been  
 tu auras été.....thou shalt have been  
 il aura été.....he shall have been  
 nous aurons été.....we shall have been  
 vous aurez été.....you shall have been  
 ils auront été.....they shall have been

## CONDITIONAL MOOD.

## PRESENT.

je serais.....I should be  
 tu serais.....thou shouldst be  
 il serait.....he should be  
 nous serions.....we should be  
 vous seriez.....you should be  
 ils seraient.....they should be

## PAST

j' aurais été.....I should have been  
 tu aurais été.....thou shouldst have been  
 il aurait été.....he should have been  
 nous aurions été.....we should have been  
 vous auriez été.....you should have been  
 ils auraient été.....they should have been

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

sois.....be (thou)  
 qu' il soit.....let him be  
 soyons.....let us be  
 soyez.....be (you)  
 qu' ils soient....let them be

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

que je sois.....that I may be  
 que tu sois.....that thou mayst be  
 qu' il soit.....that he may be  
 que nous soyons.....that we may be  
 que vous soyez.....that you may be  
 qu' ils soient.....that they may be

## PAST.

que j' aie été.....that I may have been  
 que tu aies été.....that thou mayst have been  
 qu' il ait été.....that he may have been  
 que nous ayons été.....that we may have been  
 que vous ayez été.....that you may have been  
 qu' ils aient été.....that they may have been

## IMPERFECT.

que je fusse.....that I might be  
 que tu fusses.....that thou mightst be  
 qu' il fût.....that he might be  
 que nous fussions.....that we might be  
 que vous fussiez.....that you might be  
 qu' ils fussent.....that they might be

## PLUPERFECT.

que j' eusse été.....that I might  
 que tu eusses été.....that thou mightst  
 qu' il eût été.....that he might  
 que nous eussions été.....that we might  
 que vous eussiez été.....that you might  
 qu' ils eussent été.....that they might

} have been

157. The scholar will observe that the adverb, in the following exercise, is to be placed before the adjective.

158. Whenever, in interrogative sentences, a substantive is the subject, it is to be placed at the beginning of the sentence, adding a pronoun for the interrogation immediately after the verb: as, *mon frère est-il venu?* is my brother come? instead of, *est mon frère venu?*

159. In interrogative sentences, when the third person singular of any tense ends with a vowel, for euphony, a *t*, with a hyphen before and after it, thus *-t-*, is introduced between the verb and the pronoun: as, *parle-t-on*, *aura-t-elle*, *a-t-il*, &c.

## EXERCISE XXVI.

I am very glad to see you. Are your friends still in Philadelphia?  
 bien aise de encore à Philadelphie?

Have not I been constant? Have we not been firm and cou-  
 ferme

rageous? Have those men always been good and benevolent?  
 bienfaisant?

I was too busy to see you. Were we not too untractable?  
 occupé pour recevoir indocile?

I had hitherto been very indifferent. Have you not been too  
 jusqu' alors insouciant.

imprudent? Had his wife been sufficiently modest and re-  
 épouse assez

served? Was not that princess too proud? Were you not  
 princesse fier?

too hasty? To-morrow I shall be at home till twelve o'clock.  
 prompt? chez-moi jusqu'à .....midi.....

Will your father be at home this evening? Will you  
 Monsieur chez-lui soir? m.

always then be capricious, obstinate and particular? Shall  
 donc quinteux, opiniâtre pointilleux?

I not have been too severe? Will not his sister have been  
 whimsical and capricious? Shall we not have been eager  
 fantasque empressé

enough? I would not be so rash. Would not his son  
 téméraire.  
 be ready in time? But for your instructions, I should have  
 prêt à ..Sans.. conseil,  
 been proud and haughty. Would that man have been  
 dédaigneux hautain.  
 so destitute of common sense? Do not be so lavish.  
 tellement dépourvu bon sens? prodigue.  
 Is it possible I can be so credulous? They wish us to be more  
 crédule?  
 assiduous. That you should have been so avaricious. That  
 assidu. avare.  
 she might not be so arrogant. That I might have been more studious.  
 That she might have been neater.

## FIRST CONJUGATION—IN ER.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

## PAST

parler..... to speak avoir parlé..... to have spoken

## PARTICIPLES.

## PRESENT.

## PAST.

parlant..... speaking  
 ayant parlé..... having spoken  
 parlé..... spoken

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.\*

## PRETERIT INDEFINITE.†

je parle..... I speak j' ai parlé..... I have spoken  
 tu parles..... thou speakest tu as parlé..... thou hast spoken  
 il parle..... he speaks il a parlé..... he has spoken  
 nous parlons..... we speak nous avons parlé..... we have spoken  
 vous parlez..... you speak vous avez parlé..... you have spoken  
 ils parlent..... they speak ils ont parlé..... they have spoken

\* Also, *I do speak, or am speaking; thou dost speak, or art speaking, &c.*

REMARK. The additional meanings to the different tenses given in these notes, are as correct as those used in the text, and apply equally to every verb in the French language; but are not so frequently used. The scholar, when reviewing the verbs, should rehearse each tense with the meanings in the text and notes united, in each of the four forms.

† Also, *I have been speaking, thou hast been speaking, &c.*



## IMPERFECT.\*

je parlais..... *I was speaking*  
 tu parlais..... *thou wast speaking*  
 il parlait..... *he was speaking*  
 nous parlions..... *we were speaking*  
 vous parliez..... *you were speaking*  
 ils parlaient..... *they were speaking*

## PLUPERFECT.†

j' avais parlé..... *I had spoken*  
 tu avais parlé..... *thou hadst spoken*  
 il avait parlé..... *he had spoken*  
 nous avions parlé..... *we had spoken*  
 vous aviez parlé..... *you had spoken*  
 ils avaient parlé..... *they had spoken*

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.‡

je parlai..... *I spoke*  
 tu parlas..... *thou spokest*  
 il parla..... *he spoke*  
 nous parlâmes..... *we spoke*  
 vous parlâtes..... *you spoke*  
 ils parlèrent..... *they spoke*

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.§

j' eus parlé..... *I had spoken*  
 tu eus parlé..... *thou hadst spoken*  
 il eut parlé..... *he had spoken*  
 nous eûmes parlé..... *we had spoken*  
 vous eûtes parlé..... *you had spoken*  
 ils eurent parlé..... *they had spoken*

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.||

je parlerai..... *I shall speak*  
 tu parleras..... *thou shalt speak*  
 il parlera..... *he shall speak*  
 nous parlerons..... *we shall speak*  
 vous parlerez..... *you shall speak*  
 ils parleront..... *they shall speak*

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.¶

j' aurai parlé..... *I shall have spoken*  
 tu auras parlé..... *thou shalt have spoken*  
 il aura parlé..... *he shall have spoken*  
 nous aurons parlé..... *we shall have spoken*  
 vous aurez parlé..... *you shall have spoken*  
 ils auront parlé..... *they shall have spoken*

## CONDITIONAL MOOD.

## PRESENT.\*\*

e parlerais..... *I should speak*  
 tu parlerais..... *thou shouldst speak*  
 il parlerait..... *he should speak*  
 nous parlerions..... *we should speak*  
 vous parleriez..... *you should speak*  
 ils parleraient..... *they should speak*

## PAST.††

j' aurais parlé..... *I should have spoken*  
 tu aurais parlé..... *thou shouldst have spoken*  
 il aurait parlé..... *he should have spoken*  
 nous aurions parlé..... *we should have spoken*  
 vous auriez parlé..... *you should have spoken*  
 ils auraient parlé..... *they should have spoken*

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.‡‡

parle..... *speak or do speak (thou)*  
 qu' il parle..... *let him speak*  
 parlons..... *let us speak*  
 parlez..... *speak or do speak (you)*  
 qu' ils parlent..... *let them speak*

\* Also, *I spoke, thou spokest, &c.*

† Also, *I had been speaking, thou hadst been speaking, &c.*

‡ Also, *I did speak, thou didst speak, &c.*

§ There is a fourth preterit, called *preterit anterior indefinite*, which is used, instead of the preterit anterior, when speaking of a time not entirely elapsed: as *j' ai eu achevé mon ouvrage ce matin, cette semaine, &c.*, and not *j' eus achevé*. As it is found in every conjugation, it will be inserted here: *j' ai eu parlé, tu as eu parlé, il a eu parlé, nous avons eu parlé, vous avez eu parlé, ils ont eu parlé.*

|| Also, *I will speak, thou wilt speak, &c.*

¶ Also, *I will have spoken, thou wilt have spoken, &c.*

\*\* Also, *I would, could, or might speak; thou wouldst, couldst, or mightst speak, &c.*

†† Also, *I would, could, or might have spoken; thou wouldst, couldst, or mightst have spoken, &c.*

‡‡ The second person singular of the imperative of this conjugation, and likewise of some verbs of the second, takes *s* after *e*, before the



### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.\*

que je parle.....*that I may speak*  
 que tu parles.....*that thou mayst speak*  
 qu' il parle.....*that he may speak*  
 que nous parlions.... *that we may*  
[speak  
 que vous parliez.... *that you may*  
[speak  
 qu' ils parlent.....*that they may speak*

IMPERFECT†

que je parlasse.....*that I*  
 que tu parlasses.....*that thou*  
 qu' il parlât .....*that he*  
 que nous parlussions. *that we*  
 que vous parlassiez. *that you*  
 qu' ils parlissent... *that they*

} *might speak*

PRETERIT.†

que j' aie parlé..... *that I may*  
 que tu aies parlé... *that thou mayst*  
 qu' il ait parlé..... *that he may*  
 que nous ayons parlé... *that we may*  
 que vous ayez parlé... *that you may*  
 qu' ils aient parlé..... *that they may*

PLUPERFECT. &

que j' eusse parlé . . . . . *that I might*  
 que tu eusses parlé . *that thou mightst*  
 qu' il eût parlé . . . . . *that he might*  
 que nous eussions parlé . *that we might*  
 que vous eussiez parlé . *that you might*  
 qu' ils eussent parlé . *that they might*

## OBSERVATIONS ON SOME VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

(160). 1. In verbs ending in *ger*, in those tenses where *g* is followed by the vowels *a* or *o*, the *e* is preserved, in order to prevent the *g* from taking its hard sound : as, *mangeant*, *jugeons*, *je négligeai*.

2. In verbs ending in *cer*, for a like reason, a cedilla is put under *c*, when followed by *a* or *o* : as, *suçant*, *plaçons*, *j' effaçai*.

③ In verbs ending in *ayer, eyer, oyer, uyer*, the *y* is changed into *i* before a mute *e* : as, *il paie, il grasseie, j'emploie, il essuie, j'appuierai*.

4. In some few verbs ending in *eler* and *eter*, the *l* and *t* are doubled in those inflections which receive an *e* mute after these consonants : as, from *appeler*, *il appelle* ; from *jeter*, *je jetterai*.

words *y* and *en*, for the sake of euphony : as, *portes-en à ton frère*, carry some to thy brother ; *offres-en à ta sœur*, offer some to thy sister ; *apportes-y tes livres*, convey thy books there. But when the word *en* is a preposition, the letter *s* is not to be added : as, *demeure en France*, remain in France.

\* Also, *that I can speak, that thou canst speak, &c.*

† Also, *that I can have spoken, that thou canst have spoken, &c*

‡ Also, *that I should, could, or would speak; that thou shouldst, couldst, or wouldst speak, &c.*

§ Also, that I should, could, or would have spoken; that thou shouldst, couldst, or wouldst have spoken, &c.



his credit? We do not afflict them. <sup>2</sup>We, <sup>1</sup>perhaps, shall not  
*m. affliger*  
 have <sup>2</sup>rewarded <sup>1</sup>enough the merit of this <sup>3</sup>good <sup>1</sup>man. Would  
*récompenser de bien*  
 not his attorney clear up that business? They would not unravel  
*procureur débrouiller affaire? démêler*  
 the clue of that intrigue. Would those merchants have paid  
*fil, m. f. marchand payer*  
 their debts? In all thy actions, consult the light of reason.  
*dette? Dans f. consulter f. art. f.*  
 Let us not cease to work. That you may pout incessantly.  
*cesser de travailler. boudoir sans cesse.*  
 That he might inhabit a hut, instead of a palace. That  
*...habiter... chaumière, f. m*  
 they would have struck their enemies with fear.  
*frapper de crainte.*

## SECOND CONJUGATION—IN IR.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

## PAST.

finir.....to finish avoir fini.....to have finished

## PARTICIPLES.

## PRESENT.

## PAST.

finissant.....finishing

## PAST.

fini.....having finished

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

## PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

Je finis.....I finish  
 tu finissais.....thou finishest  
 il finit.....he finishes  
 nous finissons.....we finish  
 vous finissez.....you finish  
 ils finissent.....they finish

J' ai fini.....I have finished  
 tu as fini.....thou hast finished  
 il a fini.....he has finished  
 nous avons fini.....we have finished  
 vous avez fini.....you have finished  
 ils ont fini.....they have finished

## IMPERFECT.

## PLUPERFECT.

Je finissais.....I was finishing  
 tu finissais.....thou wast finishing  
 il finissait.....he was finishing  
 nous finissions.....we were finishing  
 vous finissiez.....you were finishing  
 ils finissaient.....they were finishing

J' avais fini.....I had finished  
 tu avais fini.....thou hadst finished  
 il avait fini.....he had finished  
 nous avions fini.....we had finished  
 vous aviez fini.....you had finished  
 ils avaient fini.....they had finished

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

Je finis.....I finished  
 tu finis.....thou finishedst  
 il finit.....he finished  
 nous finîmes.....we finished  
 vous finîtes.....you finished  
 ils finirent.....they finished

J' eus fini.....I had finished  
 tu eus fini.....thou hadst finished  
 il eut fini.....he had finished  
 nous eûmes fini.....we had finished  
 vous eûtes fini.....you had finished  
 ils eurent fini.....they had finished

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

je finirai .....	<i>I shall finish</i>
tu finiras .....	<i>thou shalt finish</i>
il finira .....	<i>he shall finish</i>
nous finirons .....	<i>we shall finish</i>
vous finirez .....	<i>you shall finish</i>
ils finiront .....	<i>they shall finish</i>

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

j' aurai fini .....	<i>I shall have finished</i>
tu auras fini .....	<i>thou shalt have finished</i>
il aura fini .....	<i>he shall have finished</i>
nous aurons fini .....	<i>we shall have finished</i>
vous aurez fini .....	<i>you shall have finished</i>
ils auront fini .....	<i>they shall have finished</i>

## CONDITIONAL MOOD.

## PRESENT.

je finirais .....	<i>I should finish</i>
tu finirais .....	<i>thou shouldst finish</i>
il finirait .....	<i>he should finish</i>
nous finirions .....	<i>we should finish</i>
vous finiriez .....	<i>you should finish</i>
ils finiraient .....	<i>they should finish</i>

## PAST.

j' aurais fini .....	<i>I should have finished</i>
tu aurais fini .....	<i>thou shouldst have finished</i>
il aurait fini .....	<i>he should have finished</i>
nous aurions fini .....	<i>we should have finished</i>
vous auriez fini .....	<i>you should have finished</i>
ils auraient fini .....	<i>they should have finished</i>

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

finis .....	<i>finish (thou)</i>
qu' il finisse .....	<i>let him finish</i>
finissons .....	<i>let us finish</i>
finissez .....	<i>finish (you)</i>
qu' ils finissent .....	<i>let them finish</i>

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

que je finisse .....	<i>that I may finish</i>
que tu finisses .....	<i>that thou mayst finish</i>
qu' il finisse .....	<i>that he may finish</i>
que nous finissions .....	<i>that we may finish</i>
que vous finissiez .....	<i>that you may finish</i>
qu' ils finissent .....	<i>that they may finish</i>

## PRÆTERIT.

que j' aie fini .....	<i>that I may have finished</i>
que tu aies fini .....	<i>that thou mayst have finished</i>
qu' il ait fini .....	<i>that he may have finished</i>
que nous ayons fini .....	<i>that we may have finished</i>
que vous ayez fini .....	<i>that you may have finished</i>
qu' ils aient fini .....	<i>that they may have finished</i>

## IMPERFECT.

que je finisse .....	<i>that I might finish</i>
que tu finisses .....	<i>that thou mightst finish</i>
qu' il finit .....	<i>that he might finish</i>
que nous finissions .....	<i>that we might finish</i>
que vous finissiez .....	<i>that you might finish</i>
qu' ils finissent .....	<i>that they might finish</i>

## PLUPERFECT.

que j' eusse fini .....	<i>that I might have finished</i>
que tu eusses fini .....	<i>that thou mightst have finished</i>
qu' il eût fini .....	<i>that he might have finished</i>
que nous eussions fini .....	<i>that we might have finished</i>
que vous eussiez fini .....	<i>that you might have finished</i>
qu' ils eussent fini .....	<i>that they might have finished</i>

## OBSERVATIONS ON SOME VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

162. 1. The verb *bénir* has two participles past: *bénit*, which means consecrated; as, *pain bénit*, holy bread; *eau bénite*, holy water: and *beni*, which has all the other significations of the verb; as, *peuple béni de Dieu*, people blessed by God, &c.

163. 2. *Hair* takes a diæresis on the *i* in the whole conjugation: except in the three persons singular of the

present of the indicative, *je hais, tu hais, il hait*; and in the second person singular of the imperative, *hais*.

164. 3. *Fleurir*, when used figuratively, makes *florissant* in the imperfect of the indicative, and *florissant* in the participle present: as, *les sciences florissaient*, the sciences were flourishing; *un état florissant*, a flourishing state. *Refleurir* follows the same rule.

## EXERCISE XXVIII.

Why do you hate him? They cure the diseases of the body  
 haïr guérir maladie, *f*.  
 and not those of the mind. I was building my house, when you  
 .....bâtir..... *f*. quand  
 demolished yours. We hated him because he did not act  
 démolir agir  
 kindly towards us. We leaped over the ditch, and seized the  
 honnêtement envers ..franchir.. fossé, *m*. saisir  
 guilty. This plant will soon blossom if you water it often.  
 plante, *f*. fleurir arroser  
 Let him enjoy the fruit of his labours. Does he thus define that  
 jouir du travail. ainsi définir  
 word? Do you not pity his sorrows? I fortified his soul  
*m*. compatir à mal? prémunir  
 against the dangers of seduction. Did we not frequently  
 contre art. *f*. fréquemment  
 warn our friends of the bad state of their affairs? Did not the  
 avertir  
 enemy invade an <sup>2</sup>immense <sup>1</sup>country? I softened my father by my  
 envahir pays? *m*. fléchir  
 submission. He did not succeed through thoughtlessness. Did not  
 soumission, *f*. réussir par étourderie, *f*.  
 Alexander sully his glory by his pride? We never betrayed that  
 ternir trahir  
<sup>2</sup>important <sup>1</sup>secret. Will he not embellish his country-seat?  
*m*. embellir maison de campagne?  
 Will those men enrich their country by their industry? I should  
 enrichir pays  
 still cherish life. Couldst thou soften that <sup>2</sup>flinty <sup>1</sup>heart?  
 chérir art. *f*. attendrir de rocher  
 Would men always grow old without growing wiser, if they  
 art. vieillir devenir  
 reflected on the shortness of life? Shudder with horror and  
 réfléchir brieveté art. Frémir de

terror. Let us feed the poor. Never submit to <sup>3</sup>so <sup>4</sup>unjust  
 de effroi. nourrir *m. pl.* fléchir sous  
<sup>1</sup>a <sup>2</sup>yoke. That I may never blemish my reputation. That they  
 joug, *m.* flétrir *f.*  
 may establish <sup>3</sup>wise <sup>4</sup>and <sup>5</sup>just <sup>2</sup>laws. That I might stun <sup>2</sup>the  
<sup>1</sup>des étourdir  
<sup>1</sup>whole neighbourhood. That they might weaken the force of their  
 tout voisinage, *m.* ...affaiblir.... *f.*  
 reasons. That we might become younger.  
 raisonnement. ....rajeunir.....

### THIRD CONJUGATION.—IN *EVOIR*.

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

**PRESENT.** **PAST.**  
 recevoir.....to receive avoir reçu.....to have received

#### PARTICIPLES.

**PRESENT.** **PAST.**  
 recevant.....receiving ayant reçu.....having received  
**PAST.**  
 reçu.....received

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

**PRESENT.** **PRETERIT INDEFINITE.**  
 je reçois.....I receive j' ai reçu.....I have received  
 tu reçois.....thou receivest tu as reçu.....thou hast received  
 il reçoit.....he receives il a reçu.....he has received  
 nous recevons.....we receive nous avons reçu.....we have received  
 vous recevez.....you receive vous avez reçu.....you have received  
 ils reçoivent.....they receive ils ont reçu.....they have received

**IMPERFECT.** **PLUPERFECT.**  
 je recevais.....I was receiving j' avais reçu.....I had received  
 tu recevais.....thou wast receiving tu avais reçu.....thou hadst received  
 il recevait.....he was receiving il avait reçu.....he had received  
 nous recevions.....we were receiving nous avions reçu.....we had received  
 vous receviez.....you were receiving vous aviez reçu.....you had received  
 ils recevaient.....they were receiving ils avaient reçu.....they had received

**PRETERIT DEFINITE.** **PRETERIT ANTERIOR.**  
 je reçus.....I received j' eus reçu.....I had received  
 tu reçus.....thou receivedst tu eus reçu.....thou hadst received  
 il reçut.....he received il eut reçu.....he had received  
 nous reçûmes.....we received nous eûmes reçu.....we had received  
 vous reçûtes.....you received vous eûtes reçu.....you had received  
 ils reçurent.....they received ils eurent reçu.....they had received



## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

je recevrai..... *I shall receive*  
 tu recevras..... *thou shalt receive*  
 il recevra..... *he shall receive*  
 nous recevrons..... *we shall receive*  
 vous recevrez..... *you shall receive*  
 ils recevront..... *they shall receive*

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

j' aurai reçu..... *I shall have received*  
 tu auras reçu..... *thou shalt have received*  
 il aura reçu..... *he shall have received*  
 nous aurons reçu..... *we shall have received*  
 vous aurez reçu..... *you shall have received*  
 ils auront reçu..... *they shall have received*

## CONDITIONAL MOOD.

## PRESENT.

je recevrais..... *I should receive*  
 tu recevrais..... *thou shouldst receive*  
 il recevrait..... *he should receive*  
 nous recevriions..... *we should receive*  
 vous recevriez..... *you should receive*  
 ils recevraient..... *they should receive*

## PAST.

j' aurais reçu..... *I should have received*  
 tu aurais reçu..... *thou shouldst have received*  
 il aurait reçu..... *he should have received*  
 nous aurions reçu..... *we should have received*  
 vous auriez reçu..... *you should have received*  
 ils auraient reçu..... *they should have received*

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

reçois..... *receive (thou)*  
 qu' il reçoive..... *let him receive*  
 recevons..... *let us receive*  
 recevez..... *receive (you)*  
 qu' ils reçoivent..... *let them receive*

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

que je reçoive..... *that I*  
 que tu reçoives..... *that thou*  
 qu' il reçoive..... *that he*  
 que nous recevions..... *that we*  
 que vous receviez..... *that you*  
 qu' ils reçoivent..... *that they*

que j' aie reçu..... *that I may*  
 que tu aies reçu..... *that thou mayest*  
 qu' il ait reçu..... *that he may*  
 que nous ayons reçu..... *that we may*  
 que vous ayez reçu..... *that you may*  
 qu' ils aient reçu..... *that they may*

## IMPERFECT.

que je reçusse..... *that I*  
 que tu reçusses..... *that thou*  
 qu' il reçût..... *that he*  
 que nous reçussions..... *that we*  
 que vous reçussiez..... *that you*  
 qu' ils reçussent..... *that they*

que j' eusse reçu..... *that I might*  
 que tu eusses reçu..... *that thou mightst*  
 qu' il eût reçu..... *that he might*  
 que nous eussions reçu..... *that we might*  
 que vous eussiez reçu..... *that you might*  
 qu' ils eussent reçu..... *that they might*

## PLUPERFECT.

## REMARKS ON THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

165. This conjugation contains only seven regular verbs : which are,

percevoir, *to receive*;      recevoir, *to deceive*;  
 apercevoir, *to perceive*;      devoir, *to owe*;  
 concevoir, *to conceive*;      redevoir, *to owe again*;

and *recevoir*, the model verb, which has just been conjugated.

166. In verbs ending in *cevoir*, the *c*, to preserve its soft sound, takes a cedilla, when followed by *o* or *u*.



## EXERCISE XXIX.

I perceive the summit of the Alps covered with <sup>2</sup>perpetual  
 apercevoir sommet Alpes de éternel  
<sup>1</sup>snow. What gratitude dost thou not owe to her who, in  
 neige, *f. pl.* reconnaissance, *f.* devoir  
 thy infancy, has discharged to thee the duty of a mother! Do  
 remplir près de  
 you not perceive the snare? Did I not receive him kindly?  
 piège? *m.* avec amitié?  
 We did not receive our income. I perceived him walking by  
 qui se promenait à  
 moonlight. Shall men always owe their misfortunes  
 art. clair, *m. de la lune.* art. malheur  
 to their faults? <sup>4</sup>Should <sup>1</sup>a <sup>3</sup>wise <sup>2</sup>man give himself up thus to  
 faute? Devoir ..s'abandonner.. art.  
 despair? You would easily perceive <sup>3</sup>so <sup>4</sup>gross <sup>1</sup>a <sup>2</sup>trick. Do not  
*m.* grossier ruse, *f.*  
 receive that mark of confidence with indifference. Let us entertain a  
 ...Concevoir.... —  
 horror of vice. That they may not collect  
 de art. pour art. *m.* percevoir de  
<sup>2</sup>unjust <sup>1</sup>taxes. That you could not conceive the depth of this  
*f.* profondeur, *f.*  
 book. I am to write to your brother to-morrow, to <sup>2</sup>let <sup>1</sup>him  
 devoir écrire pour faire lui  
 know that your father is arrived. Were you not to <sup>3</sup>let <sup>2</sup>them <sup>4</sup>know  
 savoir Devoir —  
<sup>1</sup>it sooner? Receive this small present as a token of my friendship.  
 marque, *f.*  
 When did you hear from your sister? We have not  
 avez-vous reçu des nouvelles  
 heard from her since her departure. That they might not per-  
 reçu de ses nouvelles départ, *m.*  
 ceive the masts of the ship.  
 mât vaisseau, *m.*

## FOURTH CONJUGATION—IN RE.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT. PAST.  
 vendre.....to sell avoir vendu.....to have sold

## PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT. PAST.  
 vendant.....selling ayant vendu.....having sold  
 PAST.  
 vendu .....sold

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.\*

je vends ..... *I sell*  
 tu vends ..... *thou sellest*  
 il vend ..... *he sells*  
 nous vendons ..... *we sell*  
 vous vendez ..... *you sell*  
 ils vendent ..... *they sell*

## PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

j' ai vendu ..... *I have sold*  
 tu as vendu ..... *thou hast sold*  
 il a vendu ..... *he has sold*  
 nous avons vendu ..... *we have sold*  
 vous avez vendu ..... *you have sold*  
 ils ont vendu ..... *they have sold*

## IMPERFECT.

je vendais ..... *I was selling*  
 tu vendais ..... *thou wast selling*  
 il vendait ..... *he was selling*  
 nous vendions ..... *we were selling*  
 vous vendiez ..... *you were selling*  
 ils vendaient ..... *they were selling*

## PLUPERFECT.

j' avais vendu ..... *I had sold*  
 tu avais vendu ..... *thou hadst sold*  
 il avait vendu ..... *he had sold*  
 nous avions vendu ..... *we had sold*  
 vous aviez vendu ..... *you had sold*  
 ils avaient vendu ..... *they had sold*

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.

je vendis ..... *I sold*  
 tu vendis ..... *thou soldest*  
 il vendit ..... *he sold*  
 nous vendîmes ..... *we sold*  
 vous vendîtes ..... *you sold*  
 ils vendirent ..... *they sold*

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

j' eus vendu ..... *I had sold*  
 tu eus vendu ..... *thou hadst sold*  
 il eut vendu ..... *he had sold*  
 nous eûmes vendu ..... *we had sold*  
 vous eûtes vendu ..... *you had sold*  
 ils eurent vendu ..... *they had sold*

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

je vendrai ..... *I shall sell*  
 tu vendras ..... *thou shalt sell*  
 il vendra ..... *he shall sell*  
 nous vendrons ..... *we shall sell*  
 vous vendrez ..... *you shall sell*  
 ils vendront ..... *they shall sell*

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

j' aurai vendu ..... *I shall have sold*  
 tu auras vendu ..... *thou shalt have sold*  
 il aura vendu ..... *he shall have sold*  
 nous aurons vendu ..... *we shall have sold*  
 vous aurez vendu ..... *you shall have sold*  
 ils auront vendu ..... *they shall have sold*

## CONDITIONAL MOOD.

## PRESENT.

je vendrais ..... *I should sell*  
 tu vendrais ..... *thou shouldst sell*  
 il vendrait ..... *he should sell*  
 nous vendrions ..... *we should sell*  
 vous vendriez ..... *they should sell*  
 ils vendraient ..... *they should sell*

## PAST.

j' aurais vendu ..... *I should have sold*  
 tu aurais vendu ..... *thou shouldst have sold*  
 il aurait vendu ..... *he should have sold*  
 nous aurions vendu ..... *we should have sold*  
 vous auriez vendu ..... *you should have sold*  
 ils auraient vendu ..... *they should have sold*

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

vends ..... *sell (thou)*  
 qu' il vende ..... *let him sell*  
 vendons ..... *let us sell*  
 vendez ..... *sell (you)*  
 qu' ils vendent ..... *let them sell*

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

que je vende ..... *that I may sell*  
 que tu vendes ..... *that thou mayst sell*  
 qu' il vende ..... *that he may sell*  
 que nous vendions ..... *that we may sell*  
 que vous vendiez ..... *that you may sell*  
 qu' ils vendent ..... *that they may sell*

## PAST.

que j' aie vendu ..... *that I may*  
 que tu aies vendu ..... *that thou mayst*  
 qu' il ait vendu ..... *that he may*  
 que nous ayons vendu ..... *that we may*  
 que vous ayez vendu ..... *that you may*  
 qu' ils aient vendu ..... *that they may*

} *have sold*

\* The first person singular of this tense, in verbs of all the conjugations in which it has only one syllable, is used thus, interrogatively: instead of *vends-je*, we say, *est-ce que je vends?* The only exceptions that custom authorizes are: *fais-je?* *dis-je?* *dois-je?* *vais-je?* *vi-je?* *vois-je?*

## IMPERFECT.

que je vendisse..... *that I*  
 que tu vendisses..... *that thou*  
 qu' il vendit ..... *that he*  
 que nous vendissions *that we*  
 que vous vendissiez *that you*  
 qu' ils vendissent... *that they*

*might sell*

## PLUPERFECT.

que j' eusse vendu..... *that I might*  
 que tu eusses vendu *that thou mightst*  
 qu' il eût vendu..... *that he might*  
 que nous eussions vendu *that we might*  
 que vous eussiez vendu *that you might*  
 qu' ils eussent vendu *that they might*

*have sold*

## EXERCISE XXX.

I wait his return with impatience. Do you not confound these  
 attendre confondre

notions one with another? Do not those workmen waste  
 f. art. art. ouvrier perdre

their time about trifles? Did those orators throw the graces  
 à des bagatelles? répandre

of expression into their speeches? I aimed at an <sup>2</sup>honest  
 art. discours? tendre à

lend. Did we offer our incense to the pride of a blockhead?  
 but, m. vendre encens sot?

Did not the children come down at the first summons? Shall  
 descendre ordre? m. s.

I hear the music of the new opera? Will you not new-model a  
 entendre f. m. refondre

work so full of <sup>2</sup>charming <sup>1</sup>ideas? They will assiduously correspond  
 f. assidûment correspondre

with their friends. Should we sell our liberty? Expect not  
 Attendre

happiness from <sup>2</sup>external <sup>1</sup>objects; it is in thyself. Let us  
 art. art. extérieur m.

not descend to <sup>2</sup>useless <sup>1</sup>particulars. Ye sovereigns, make  
 descendre dans des particularité. — rendre

the people happy. That he may not reply to <sup>2</sup>such <sup>3</sup>absurd  
 répondre un

<sup>1</sup>criticism. That we may have aimed at the same end. That they  
 critique, f.

may not depend on anybody. That she might not melt into  
 dépendre de personne. fondre en

tears. That they might wait for the opinion of <sup>2</sup>sensible <sup>1</sup>persons.  
 larmes. ...attendre ... sensé f.

Did I not interrupt him, while he was answering them?  
 interrompre pendant que ...répondre...

As soon as I had received my money, I returned them what they  
 ..Dès que.. rendre

had lent me. I shall shear my flock in the month of May.  
 prêter ..tondre.. troupeau, m.

If you do not take care, the dog will bite you. Speak loud,  
 prendre garde, mordre haut,

that I may hear what you say.  
 entendre

## OF THE NEUTER VERBS.

167. There are, in the French language, about six hundred neuter verbs, the larger portion of which, like the active verbs, take the auxiliary *avoir*, to form their compound tenses. The exceptions, given below, are some few which take *être*; and others which take *avoir* or *être*, according to the sense. The latter are marked with an asterisk, \*.

aborder\*.....to land  
accoucher\*.....to be brought to bed  
accourir.....to run to  
accroître\*.....to increase  
aller.....to go  
apparaître\*.....to appear  
arriver.....to happen  
avenir.....to happen, to chance  
cesser\*.....to cease, to leave off  
changer\*.....to change  
choir.....to fall  
convenir\*.....to agree, to suit†  
croître\*.....to grow  
decamper\*.....to decamp, to run away  
décéder.....to de cease  
déchoir\*.....to decay  
décroître\*.....to decrease  
demeurer\*.....to remain, to stay  
descendre\*.....to go down, to descend  
devenir.....to become  
disconvenir.....to deny, to disown  
disparaître\*.....to disappear  
échapper\*.....to escape  
échoir.....to become due  
échouer\*.....to run aground, to miscarry  
éclore.....to be hatched, to blow  
embellir\*.....to embellish  
empirer\*.....to grow worse  
entrer\*.....to enter, to go in

expirer\*.....to expire  
intervenir.....to intervene  
mésavenir.....to succeed ill  
monter\*.....to ascend, to go up  
mourir.....to die  
naître.....to be born  
partir.....to depart, to set off  
parvenir.....to attain, to reach  
passer\*.....to pass  
périr\*.....to perish  
provenir.....to proceed  
rajeunir\*.....to become young  
redescendre\*.....to go down again  
redevenir.....to become again  
remonter\*.....to go up again  
rentrer\*.....to re-enter, to go in again  
repartir.....to set off again†  
repasser\*.....to pass again  
ressortir\*.....to go out again  
rester\*.....to remain, to stay  
résulter\*.....to result, to follow  
retomber.....to fall again  
retourner.....to return, to go back  
revenir.....to come back again  
sortir\*.....to go out  
survenir.....to befall, to happen  
tomber.....to fall  
venir.....to come  
vieillir\*.....to become old

168. The verb *avoir* is used to form the compound tenses of those verbs which express the *action* of the subject; and the verb *être*, the compound tenses of such verbs as express the *state* of the subject.

169. The participle of those neuter verbs which take *être* for their auxiliary, must agree, both in gender and number with its subject.

† Convenir, to agree, takes *être*; and convenir, to suit, to become, takes *avoir*.

‡ Repartir, to set off again, takes *être*; but repartir, to reply, takes *avoir*.

The following are examples :

<i>state :</i>	Elle <i>est</i> sortie.	<i>She is out.</i>
<i>action :</i>	Elle <i>a</i> sorti ce matin, et elle est de retour.	<i>She went out this morning, and she has returned.</i>
<i>state :</i>	Elle <i>est</i> montée dans sa chambre, et elle y <i>est</i> restée.	<i>She is gone up to her room, and has remained there.</i>
<i>action :</i>	Elle <i>a</i> monté quatre fois à sa chambre pendant la journée.	<i>She went up to her room four times in the course of the day.</i>

### EXERCISE XXXI.

They came to see us with the greatest haste. When  
 — voir — empressément. Quand  
 did they arrive? That estate fell to his lot.  
*est-ce que* arriver? terre, *f.* lui est échu en — partage  
 He fell from his horse, but happily received only a slight  
 tomber — il ne léger  
 confusion on the knee. That thing escaped from my  
*f.* à genou, *m.* m'est —  
 memory. She expired in the arms of her mother. All those  
*art.* a  
 that were on board of that ship have perished. He is gone up to his  
 room, and has remained there.

### OF THE PRONOMINAL VERBS.

170. The pronominal verbs are those in which each person is conjugated through all the tenses with a double personal pronoun : as,

<i>Subj.</i>	<i>Obj.</i>	<i>Subj.</i>	<i>Obj.</i>	<i>Subj.</i>	<i>Obj.</i>	<i>Subj.</i>	<i>Obj.</i>
je	me,	<i>I</i>	<i>myself</i> ;	nous	nous,	<i>we</i>	<i>ourselves</i> ;
tu	te,	<i>thou</i>	<i>thyself</i> ;	vous	vous,	<i>you</i>	<i>yourselves</i> ;
il	se,	<i>he</i>	<i>himself</i> ;	ils	se,	<i>they</i>	<i>themselves</i> ;
elle	se,	<i>she</i>	<i>herself</i> ;	elles	se,	<i>they</i>	<i>themselves</i> .

171. There are four kinds of pronominal verbs.

172. 1. The *pronominal verb active*, which expresses an action of the subject falling, or reflected, upon the object : as, *je me flatte*, I flatter myself.

173. The participle past of these verbs must always agree in gender and number with the objective pronoun: as, *elles se sont flattées*, they have flattered themselves.

Almost all the active verbs are susceptible of being reflected.

174. 2. The *pronominal verb neuter*, which indicates only a state or disposition of the subject: as, *se repentir*, to repent.

175. 3. The *reciprocal verb*, which expresses a reciprocity of action between two or more subjects: as, *s'entr'aider*, to help one another. *Il se s'entr'aident.*

176. 4. The *pronominal verb impersonal*, which is only used in the third person singular. Active verbs frequently assume this form for the sake of brevity and energy: as, *il se faisait*, there was doing; *il s'est dit* it has been said.

177. All the compound tenses of the pronominal verbs are formed by means of the auxiliary verb *être*.

178. The inflections of all the tenses of these verbs follow the conjugations to which they belong.

## CONJUGATION OF THE PRONOMINAL VERB *SE LEVER*, TO RISE, IN THE FOUR FORMS.

### 1. AFFIRMATIVE FORM.

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PAST.
se lever.....to rise	s' être levé.....to have risen

#### PARTICIPLES

PRESENT.	PAST.
se levant.....rising	s' étant levé.....having risen
PAST.	
levé.....risen	

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PRETERIT INDEFINITE.
je me lève.....I rise	je me suis levé.....I have risen
tu te lèves.....thou risest	tu t' est levé....thou hast risen
il se lève.....he rises	il s' est levé.....he has risen
nous nous levons.....we rise	nous nous sommes levés...we have risen
vous vous levez.....you rise	vous vous êtes levés....you have risen
il se lèvent.....they rise	ils se sont levés.....they have risen



## IMPERFECT.

je me levais.....*I was rising*  
 tu te levais.....*thou wast rising*  
 il se levait.....*he was rising*  
 nous nous levions.....*we were rising*  
 vous vous leviez.....*you were rising*  
 ils se levaient.....*they were rising*

## PLUPERFECT.

je m' étais levé.....*I had risen*  
 tu t' étais levé.....*thou hadst risen*  
 il s' était levé.....*he had risen*  
 nous nous étions levés.....*we had risen*  
 vous vous étiez levés.....*you had risen*  
 ils s' étaient levés.....*they had risen*

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.

je me levai.....*I rose*  
 tu te levas.....*thou rodest*  
 il se leva.....*he rose*  
 nous nous levâmes.....*we rose*  
 vous vous levâtes.....*you rose*  
 ils se levèrent.....*they rose*

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

je me fus levé.....*I had risen*  
 tu te fus levé.....*thou hadst risen*  
 il se fut levé.....*he had risen*  
 nous nous fûmes levés.....*we had risen*  
 vous vous fûtes levés.....*you had risen*  
 ils se furent levés.....*they had risen*

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

je me leverai.....*I shall rise*  
 tu te leveras.....*thou shalt rise*  
 il se levera.....*he shall rise*  
 nous nous leverons.....*we shall rise*  
 vous vous leverez.....*you shall rise*  
 ils se leveront.....*they shall rise*

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

je me serai levé.....*I shall have risen*  
 tu te seras levé.....*thou shalt have risen*  
 il se sera levé.....*he shall have risen*  
 nous nous serons levés.....*we shall have risen*  
 vous vous serez levés.....*you shall have risen*  
 ils se seront levés.....*they shall have risen*

## CONDITIONAL MOOD.

## PRESENT.

je me leverais.....*I should rise*  
 tu te leverais.....*thou shouldst rise*  
 il se leverait.....*he should rise*  
 nous nous leverions.....*we should rise*  
 vous vous leveriez.....*you should rise*  
 ils se leveraient.....*they should rise*

## PAST.

je me serais levé.....*I should*  
 tu te serais levé.....*thou shouldst*  
 il se serait levé.....*he should*  
 nous nous serions levés.....*we should*  
 vous vous seriez levés.....*you should*  
 ils se seraient levés.....*they should*

} have risen

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

lève-toi.....*rise (thou)*  
 qu' il se lève.....*let him rise*  
 levons-nous.....*let us rise*  
 levez-vous.....*rise (you)*  
 qu' ils se lèvent.....*let them rise*

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

que je me lève.....*that I*  
 que tu te lèves.....*that thou*  
 qu' il se lève.....*that he*  
 que nous nous levions.....*that we*  
 que vous vous leviez.....*that you*  
 qu' ils se lèvent.....*that they*

} may rise

## PRETERIT.

que je me sois levé.....*that I*  
 que tu te sois levé.....*that thou*  
 qu' il se soit levé.....*that he*  
 que nous nous soyons levés.....*that we*  
 que vous vous soyez levés.....*that you*  
 qu' ils se soient levés.....*that they*

} may have risen

## IMPERFECT.

que je me levasse.....*that I*  
 que tu te levasses.....*that you*  
 qu' il se levât.....*that he*  
 que nous nous levassions.....*that we*  
 que vous vous levassiez.....*that you*  
 qu' ils se levassent.....*that they*

} might rise

## PLUPERFECT.

que je me fusse levé.....*that I*  
 que tu te fusses levé.....*that you*  
 qu' il se fût levé.....*that he*  
 que nous nous fussions levés.....*that we*  
 que vous vous fussiez levés.....*that you*  
 qu' ils se fussent levés.....*that they*

} might have risen



2. *NEGATIVE FORM.\**

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

ne pas se lever.....not to rise

## PAST.

ne s' être pas levé.....not to have risen

## PARTICIPLES.

## PRESENT.

ne se levant pas.....not rising

## PAST.

ne s' étant pas levé.....not to have risen

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

je ne me lève pas .....*I rise not*  
 tu ne te lèves pas .....*thou risest not*  
 il ne se lève pas .....*he rises not*  
 nous ne nous levons pas .....*we rise not*  
 vous ne vous levez pas .....*you rise not*  
 ils ne se lèvent pas.....*they rise not*

## PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

je ne me suis pas levé .....*I*  
 tu ne t' es pas levé.....*thou*  
 il ne s' est pas levé.....*he*  
 nous ne nous sommes pas levés.....*we*  
 vous ne vous êtes pas levés .....*you*  
 ils ne se sont pas levés .....*they*

} *have not risen*

&amp;c.

&amp;c.

&amp;c.

&amp;c.

3. *INTERROGATIVE FORM.*

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

me levé-je .....*do I rise*  
 te lèves-tu.....*dost thou rise*  
 se lève-t-il .....*does he rise*  
 nous levons-nous.....*do we rise*  
 vous levez-vous.....*do you rise*  
 se lèvent-ils.....*do they rise*

&amp;c.

&amp;c.

## PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

me suis-je levé .....*have I risen*  
 t' es-tu levé.....*hast thou risen*  
 s' est-il levé.....*has he risen*  
 nous sommes-nous levés.....*have we risen*  
 vous êtes-vous levés.....*have you risen*  
 se sont-ils levés.....*have they risen*

&amp;c.

&amp;c.

4. *NEGATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE FORM.*

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

ne me levé-je pas .....*do I*  
 ne te lèves-tu pas.....*dost thou*  
 ne se lève-t-il pas .....*does he*  
 ne nous levons nous pas .....*do we*  
 ne vous levez-vous pas .....*do you*  
 ne se lèvent-ils pas.....*do they*

&amp;c.

&amp;c.

## PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

ne me suis-je pas levé.....*have I*  
 ne t' es-tu pas levé.....*hast thou*  
 ne s' est-il pas levé.....*has he*  
 ne nous sommes-nous pas levés.....*have we*  
 ne vous êtes-vous pas levés.....*have you*  
 ne se sont-ils pas levés.....*have they*

&amp;c.

&amp;c.

## EXERCISE XXXII.

Dost thou not deceive thyself? He is never happy but  
 ...se tromper?... ..ne se plaire... que  
 when he is doing wrong! Do we not nurse ourselves too  
 ....à faire..... de art. mal! m. ....s' écouter...

\* It is not deemed necessary to give an example of more than two or three tenses of the *negative*, *interrogative*, or *negative-and-interrogative* forms of the pronominal verb; as the scholar is already familiar with these forms in preceding verbs. If he should find any difficulty in conjugating them, he will readily surmount it by referring to pages 85, 86, and 87, taken in connexion with page 108, ante

much? They mean to travel in the spring. Didst thou not  
 se proposer de à m.  
 lose thyself in the wood? It is said that he killed himself from  
 ..s' égarer.. .On dit.. ...se tuer...  
 despair. Wast thou not laying the foundation for much sorrow  
 .....se préparer..... bien regret, pl.  
 by thy foolish conduct? Did you not laugh at us? They  
 se moquer de  
 ruined themselves wantonly. Didst thou not confide too  
 .... se perdre .... de gaité de cœur. se confier  
 inconsiderately in this man? Had you not been engaged in  
 légèrement à ..s' occuper.. de  
 trifles? Had those travellers gone out of the right way? I  
 bagatelle? se détourner droit chemin?  
 repented, but too late, of having taken <sup>2</sup>such <sup>1</sup>a step. Did  
 se repentir, tard, avoir fait démarche, f.  
 not those <sup>2</sup>rash <sup>1</sup>children applaud themselves for their folly?  
 téméraire .....s' applaudir.... de sottise?  
 As soon as I discovered that they sought to deceive me, I was  
 ..Dès que.. s'apercevoir chercher se tenir  
 on my guard. When he had rejoiced sufficiently, we parted.  
 pl. se réjouir assez, se séparer.  
 When they had walked enough, they sat down at the foot  
 se promener s'assirent à  
 of a tree. I will yield if they convince me. We shall not  
 se rendre on convaincre  
 forget ourselves so far as to be wanting in respect to him. Will  
 ...s' oublier... .jusque. .manquer.. de  
 you employ the means I point out to you? He will have  
 se servir de indiquer —  
 been proud of this trifling advantage. Should I suffer myself  
 s'enorgueillir faible m. ..se laisser..  
 to be drawn into the party of the rebels? We should not rejoice  
 ..entraîner.. m. se plaire  
 to see the triumph of guilt. Would those lords avail  
 triomphe art. crime, m. seigneur ...se  
 themselves of their birth and fortune, to do violence to our  
 prevaloir.. f. richesses, pour  
 feelings? Would this pleasing hope have vanished so soon?  
 sentiment? doux espoir s'évanouir  
 Let us take an <sup>2</sup>exact <sup>1</sup>account of our actions. It is time that they  
 .Se rendre. compte  
 should have relaxation from the fatigue of business. Did they  
 .....se délasser..... f. art. pl. on  
 not wish that he should practise fencing? They required  
 voulait ..s' exercer... à faire des armes? On exigeait

that I should go to bed at ten o'clock. Would they have wished  
 s; coucher à vouloir  
 that I had revenged myself? We could have wished that they had  
 ....se venger?....  
 extricated themselves more skilfully from the difficulties in which  
 .....se tirer..... adroitement embarras .où..  
 they had placed themselves.  
 ....se mettre.....

---

## OF THE PASSIVE VERBS.

179. There is but one mode of conjugating passive verbs: it is by adding to the verb *être*, through all the moods and tenses, the participle past of the verb active; which must agree in gender and number with the subject: as,

Je suis aimé.	<i>I am loved.</i>
Mon père fut respecté.	<i>My father was respected.</i>
Ma mère fut révéree.	<i>My mother was revered.</i>
Nous serons loués.	<i>We shall be praised.</i>

## EXERCISE XXXIII.

That young lady is so mild, so polite, and so kind, that she  
 jeune demoiselle doux, honnête, bon,  
 is beloved by every body. He performed with so much  
 aimer de jouer tant de  
 ability that he was universally applauded. He is known by no-  
 intelligence applaudi de  
 body. How many countries, unknown to the ancients, have been  
 Que de pays, inconnu  
 discovered by <sup>2</sup>modern navigators! If they had got into it  
 art. navigateur!  
 through the door, they should have come out of it through the window.  
 To be happy and to be praised are two very different things.  
 art.  
 Men are too often exposed to lose their life in order to get their  
 — art.  
 livelihood.  
 vie

---

## OF THE IMPERSONAL VERBS.

180. Verbs that are conjugated only in the third person singular are called impersonal verbs; and are gene-

rally preceded by the pronoun *il*. Observe that the *il* has no relation to a substantive, as may be seen by the impossibility of substituting a noun for it in the following examples.

<i>il pleut</i> .....	<i>it rains</i>	<i>il convient</i> .....	<i>it becomes</i>
<i>il s'ensuit</i> .....	<i>it is becoming</i>	<i>il s'ensuit</i> .....	<i>it follows</i>
<i>il messied</i> .....	<i>it is unbecoming</i>	<i>il est à propos</i> .....	<i>it is proper</i>
<i>il semble</i> .....	<i>it seems</i>	<i>il faut</i> .....	<i>it is necessary</i>
<i>il paraît</i> .....	<i>it appears</i>	<i>il y a</i> .....	<i>there is, or are</i>
<i>il suffit</i> .....	<i>it suffices</i>	<i>il importe</i> .....	<i>it matters</i>

## CONJUGATION OF THE IMPERSONAL VERB *NEIGER*, TO SNOW.

### INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PAST.
<i>neiger</i> .....to snow	<i>avoir neigé</i> .....to have snowed

### PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.			
neigeant.....	snowing	PAST.	
PAST.		ayant neigé.....	having snowed
neigé.....	snowed		

### INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PRETERIT INDEFINITE.	
il neige.....	<i>it snows</i>	il a neigé.....	<i>it has snowed</i>
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
il neigeait.....	<i>it was snowing</i>	il avait neigé.....	<i>it had snowed</i>
PRETERIT DEFINITE.		PRETERIT ANTERIOR.	
il neigea.....	<i>it snowed</i>	il eut neigé.....	<i>it had snowed</i>
FUTURE ABSOLUTE.		FUTURE ANTERIOR.	
il neigera.....	<i>it will snow</i>	il aura neigé.....	<i>it will have snowed</i>

### CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.	PAST.
il neigerait..... <i>it should snow</i>	il aurait neigé.. <i>it should have snowed</i>

### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PRETERIT.
qu' il neige..... --that it may snow	qu' il ait neigé..that it may have snowed.
IMPERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.
qu' il neigeât ..... that it might snow	qu' il eût neigé....-that it might have snowed.

Conjugate in like manner the following verbs.

<i>il arrive</i> .....	<i>it happens</i>	<i>il regèle</i> .....	<i>it freezes again</i>
<i>il bruine</i> .....	<i>it drizzles</i>	<i>il grêle</i> .....	<i>it hails</i>
<i>il dégèle</i> .....	<i>it thaws</i>	<i>il grésille</i> .....	<i>it rimes</i>
<i>il éclaire</i> .....	<i>it lightens</i>	<i>il résulte</i> .....	<i>it follows</i>
<i>il gèle</i> .....	<i>it freezes</i>	<i>il tonne</i> .....	<i>it thunders</i>

## EXERCISE XXXIV.

Does it rain this morning? Did it hail <sup>2</sup> last <sup>1</sup>night? I thought  
 pleuvoir *m.* grêler *f.* croyais  
 it had thundered. Does it not lighten? Do you think  
 que tonner. croyez  
 it freezes? It was not my friend's fault that it was not  
 que geler? • n' a pas tenu à mon ami. • la chose fût  
 so. It was of great importance to succeed. Would it be proper to  
 insi. ...importait beaucoup... de à propos de  
 write to your friends? It appears that he has not attended to that busi-  
 s' occuper de  
 ness. Perhaps it would be better to abandon the undertaking. It  
 vaudrait entreprendre.  
 was sufficient to know his opinion. I advise you not to go out  
 ..suffisait. de conseiller de  
 this morning; I think it will soon rain. It matters little whether  
 que que  
 you do your exercise now or later, provided it be well done.  
 fassiez pourvu que  
 \*You <sup>1</sup>must speak to him about that affair. It was necessary  
 Il faut que *sub. pr.* de ....a fallu.....  
 for him that he should consent to that bargain. How much do you  
 — marché, *m.* Combien  
 want? He does what is requisite. Do that as it should be. What  
 falloir? ...falloir.... .....faut.... Que  
<sup>2</sup>must <sup>1</sup>he have for his trouble? I could not suspect that I  
 falloir lui — peine? *f.* pouvais soupçonner  
 ought to ask pardon for a fault I have not committed.  
 dusse — de *f.* que commise.

Observe that the impersonal verb *falloir* can be used in two different ways, thus:

Il me faudra payer les frais; *or*, il faudra que je paie les frais. *I must pay the costs.*

## CONJUGATION OF THE IMPERSONAL VERB Y AVOIR, THERE TO BE.

### INFINITIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

## PAST.

y avoir..... there to be y avoir eu ..... there to have been

### PARTICIPLES.

## PRESENT.

## PAST.

y ayant..... there being y ayant eu..... there having been

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

il y a ..... *there is, or there are*

## PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

il y a eu. *there has been, or there have been*

## IMPERFECT.

il y avait... *there was, or there were*

## PLUPERFECT.

il y avait eu ..... *there had been*

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.

il y eut..... *there was, or there were*

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

il y eut eu..... *there had been*

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

il y aura..... *there will be*

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

il y aura eu..... *there will have been*

## CONDITIONAL MOOD.

## PRESENT..

il y aurait..... *there should be*

## PAST.

il y aurait eu *there should have been*

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

qu' il y ait..... *let there be*

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

qu' il y ait..... *that there may be*

## PRETERIT.

qu' il y ait eu. *that there may have been*

## IMPERFECT.

qu' il y eût..... *that there might be*

## PLUPERFECT.

qu' il y eût eu. *that there might have been*

181. *Y avoir*, in English, is used in the plural, when followed by a substantive plural; in French it remains always in the singular.

## EXERCISE XXXV.

<sup>2</sup>There <sup>1</sup>must be a great difference of age between these two persons.

Il doit

f.

There being so many <sup>2</sup>vicious <sup>1</sup>people in this world, is it  
...tant... de gens, m.

astonishing that there are so many persons who become the vic-  
étonnant ait deviennent

tims of the corruption of the age? It is a thousand to  
perversité siècle? m. — mille à parier contre

one that he will not succeed. There would be more happiness  
de bonheur

if every one knew how to moderate his desires. I did not think  
..chacun.. savait — — croyais

that there would be any thing to blame in his conduct. There  
rien reprendre

would not be so many duels, did people reflect that one of the first  
si l' on

obligations of a Christian is to forgive injuries. Could  
f. Chrétien de pardonner art. Pourrait-il

there be a king happier than this, who has always been the father  
celui-ci,  
of his subjects?



## OF THE FORMATION OF TENSES.

182. The tenses of the verbs are divided into *primitive* and *derivative*.

183. The *primitive tenses* are those which form all the other tenses, and are five in number, viz.:

The present of the infinitive,  
The participle present,  
The participle past,  
The present of the indicative, and  
The preterit definite.

184. The *derivative tenses* are those which are formed by the primitive tenses.

185. The present of the infinitive forms two tenses :

186. 1. The *future absolute*, by changing *r, re, or oir*, into *rai* : as, *parler, je parlerai ; finir, je finirai ; vendre, je vendrai ; recevoir, je recevrai*.

187. 2. The *conditional present*, by changing *r, re, or oir*, into *rais* : as, *parler, je parlerais ; finir, je finirais ; vendre, je vendrais ; recevoir, je recevrais*.

188. The participle present forms two tenses :

189. 1. The *imperfect of the indicative*, by changing *ant* into *ais* : as, *parlant, je parlais ; finissant, je finissais*.

190. 2. The *present of the subjunctive*, by changing *ant* into *e* : as, *parlant, que je parle ; finissant, que je finisse ; vendant, que je vende* :

191. Except the verbs of the third conjugation, which change *evant* into *oive* : as, *recevant, que je reçoive*.

192. Observe, that the first and second persons plural of these two tenses, which end in *ions* and *iez*, make *iions* and *ieez*, when the participle ends in *iant* ; and make *yions* and *yieez*, when the participle ends in *yant* : as, *priant, nous priions, vous priez ; payant, nous payions, ous payiez*.



193. The participle past forms all the compound tenses with the help of the verb *avoir*, or *être* : as, *j' ai estimé, je suis estimé ; il avait fini, il était fini.*

194. The present of the indicative forms the *imperative*, by suppressing the pronouns which serve as subjects : as, *tu parles, parles ; nous parlons, parlons ; vous parlez, parlez.*

195. Observe, that in the first conjugation only, the second person singular of the imperative does not take the *s* final of the same person of the indicative.

196. The preterit definite forms the *imperfect of the subjunctive*, by changing *i* into *sse*, for the first conjugation, and by adding *se*, for the three others : as, *je parlai, que je parlasse ; je finis, que je finisse ; je reçus, que je reçusse ; je vendis, que je vendisse.*

## TABLE OF THE TERMINATIONS OF THE SIMPLE TENSES OF THE FOUR CONJUGATIONS.

### INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.			
parl er	fin ir	rec evoir	vend re

### PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.			
parl ant	fin issant	rec erant	vend ant

PAST.				
parl é	fin i	reç u	vend u	

### INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.								
je	parl	<i>e</i>	fin	<i>is</i>	reç	<i>ois</i>	vend	<i>s</i>
tu		<i>es</i>		<i>is</i>		<i>ois</i>		<i>s</i>
il		<i>e</i>		<i>it</i>		<i>oit</i>		
nous		<i>ons</i>		<i>issons</i>		<i>erons</i>		<i>ons</i>
vous		<i>ez</i>		<i>issez</i>		<i>eviez</i>		<i>ez</i>
ils		<i>ent</i>		<i>issent</i>		<i>oivent</i>		<i>ent</i>

IMPERFECT.								
je	parl	ais	fin	issais	rec	étais	vend	étais
tu		ais		issais		étais		étais
il		ait		issait		était		était
nous		ions		issions		évisions		ions
vous		iez		issiez		eviez		iez
ils		aient		issaient		évaient		aient

PRETERIT DEFINITE.						
je	parl	ai	fin	is	reç us	vend is
tu		as		is	us	is
il		a		it	ut	it
nous		âmes		îmes	ûmes	îmes
vous		âtes		îtes	ûtes	îtes
ils		èrent		îrent	urent	îrent

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

je	parl <i>erai</i>	fin <i>irai</i>	rec <i>evrai</i>	vend <i>rai</i>
tu	<i>eras</i>	<i>iras</i>	<i>evras</i>	<i>ras</i>
il	<i>era</i>	<i>ira</i>	<i>evra</i>	<i>ra</i>
nous	<i>erons</i>	<i>irons</i>	<i>evrons</i>	<i>rons</i>
vous	<i>erez</i>	<i>irez</i>	<i>evrez</i>	<i>rez</i>
ils	<i>eront</i>	<i>iront</i>	<i>evront</i>	<i>ront</i>

## CONDITIONAL MOOD.

## PRESENT.

je	parl <i>erais</i>	fin <i>irais</i>	rec <i>evrais</i>	vend <i>rais</i>
tu	<i>erais</i>	<i>irais</i>	<i>evrais</i>	<i>rais</i>
il	<i>erait</i>	<i>irait</i>	<i>evrait</i>	<i>rait</i>
nous	<i>erions</i>	<i>irions</i>	<i>evrions</i>	<i>rions</i>
vous	<i>eriez</i>	<i>iriez</i>	<i>evriez</i>	<i>riez</i>
ils	<i>eraient</i>	<i>iraient</i>	<i>evraient</i>	<i>raient</i>

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

qu' il	parl <i>e</i>	fin <i>is</i>	reç <i>ois</i>	vend <i>s</i>
	<i>e</i>	<i>isse</i>	<i>oive</i>	<i>e</i>
	<i>ons</i>	<i>issons</i>	<i>evons</i>	<i>ons</i>
qu' ils	<i>ez</i>	<i>issez</i>	<i>eviez</i>	<i>ez</i>
	<i>ent</i>	<i>issent</i>	<i>oivent</i>	<i>ent</i>

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

## PRESENT.

que je	parl <i>e</i>	fin <i>isse</i>	reç <i>oive</i>	vend <i>e</i>
que tu	<i>es</i>	<i>isses</i>	<i>oives</i>	<i>es</i>
qu' il	<i>e</i>	<i>isse</i>	<i>oive</i>	<i>e</i>
que nous	<i>ions</i>	<i>issions</i>	<i>evions</i>	<i>ions</i>
que vous	<i>iez</i>	<i>issiez</i>	<i>eviez</i>	<i>iez</i>
qu' ils	<i>ent</i>	<i>issent</i>	<i>oivent</i>	<i>ent</i>

## IMPERFECT.

que je	parl <i>asse</i>	fin <i>isse</i>	reç <i>usse</i>	vend <i>isse</i>
que tu	<i>asses</i>	<i>isses</i>	<i>usses</i>	<i>isses</i>
qu' il	<i>ût</i>	<i>ît</i>	<i>ût</i>	<i>ît</i>
que nous	<i>ussions</i>	<i>issions</i>	<i>ussions</i>	<i>issions</i>
que vous	<i>assiez</i>	<i>issiez</i>	<i>ussiez</i>	<i>issiez</i>
qu' ils	<i>assent</i>	<i>issent</i>	<i>ussent</i>	<i>issent</i>

## OF THE IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

197. Irregularities never occur but in the simple tenses.

198. When a primitive tense is wanting, its derivative tenses are also wanting.

199. The imperfect of the indicative is always regularly formed by the participle present.

200. The future, and conditional never change their terminations, and the irregularity which they undergo is always uniform; so that, the first person of the future being known, it is easy to form both tenses.

201. The preterit definite is always regular.

202. The imperfect of the subjunctive is always regularly formed by the preterit definite.

203. The imperative is always regularly formed by the present of the indicative, except in the verbs *avoir*, *être*, and *savoir*, for which see the following table.

204. The third person singular and plural of the imperative being always the same as in the present of the subjunctive, may be considered as belonging to that tense.

205. By attending to these directions, and applying them to the annexed "Table of the Irregular and Defective Verbs," and the "List of all the Irregular and Defective Verbs in the French Language not contained in the Table," immediately following it, the study of the important branch of grammar here treated of may be mastered certainly, and without difficulty.

206. In the "List," which consists chiefly of compounds of verbs in the Table, reference is made from each verb to a model in the Table, conformably to which it is to be conjugated.

## TABLE OF THE IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

	<i>Infinitive present.</i>	<i>Participle present.</i>	<i>Participle past.</i>	<i>Indicative present.</i>	<i>Preterit definite.</i>	<i>Future absolute.</i>	<i>Subjunctive present.</i>
<i>to go*</i>	<u>aller</u>	allant	allé	vais..... allons vas..... allez va..... vont	j' allai	j' irai	aille..... allions ailles..... alliez aille..... aillent
<i>to send</i>	envoyer	envoyant	envoyé	envoie..... envoyons envoies..... envoyez envoie..... envoient	j' envoyai	j' enverrai	envoie..... envoyions envoies..... envoyiez envoie..... envoient
<i>to matter†</i>	importer	.....	.....	il importe	.....	il importera	qu' il importe
<i>to succeed ill</i>	mésarriver	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	qu' il mésarrivera
<i>to stink</i>	puer	puant	pué	pus..... puons pus..... puez put..... puent	.....	je puerai	pue..... puions pues..... puez pue..... puent
<i>to weave‡</i>	tisser	tissant	tissu	tisse..... tissons tisses..... tissez tisse..... tissent	.....	je tisserai	tisse..... tissions tisses..... tissiez tisse..... tissent

\* The verb *aller* is sometimes erroneously used instead of the *j' irai vous voir*, and not, *je viendrai vous voir*; but if we are verb *être*. For instance, some say, *je suis allé à Paris*; *il est allé à Paris*: meaning that they have been there. This is a mistake. They must say, *j' ai été à Paris*; *il a été à Paris*. But when we want to express the action of going, we must say, *il est allé à Paris*.

† Is only used impersonally. The imperf. indic. is, *il importait*.

‡ The participle past is borrowed from the obsolete verb *tistre*.  
When we are speaking to a person in the street, we must say, *tistrez*.

## TABLE OF THE IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS—Continued.

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

	<i>Participle present.</i>	<i>Partici- ple past.</i>	<i>Indicative present.</i>	<i>Preterit defi- nite.</i>	<i>Future abso- lute.</i>	<i>Subjunctive present.</i>
<i>to acquire</i>	acquérir	acquis	acquiers...acquérez acquiert...acquèrent	j' acquies j' assaillis	j' acquerrai j' assaillirai	acquière...acquérions acquières...acquériez acquière...acquèrent assaile...assailions assailles...assailiez assaile...assailent qu' il a vienne
<i>to assault</i>	assaillir	assailli	assaile...assailions assailles...assailiez assaile...assailent	il avient... je bouillis	il avindra je bouillirai	bouille...bouillons bouilles...bouilliez bouille...bouillent cours...coursions cours...coursiez cours...courent cueille...cueillions cueilles...cueilliez cueille...cueillent
<i>to happen*</i>	avenir	avenu	il avient... bons...bouillons bous...bouillez bout...bouillent	il avint je bouillis	il avindra je bouillirai	qu' il a vienne
<i>to boil</i>	bouillir	bouilli	bons...bouillons bous...bouillez bout...bouillent	il avint je bouillis	il avindra je bouillirai	bouille...bouillons bouilles...bouilliez bouille...bouillent
<i>to run</i>	courir	couru	cours...coursions court...courez court...courent	je courus je cueillis	je courrai je cueillerai	cours...coursions cours...coursiez cours...courent cueille...cueillions cueilles...cueilliez cueille...cueillent
<i>to gather</i>	cueillir	cueilli	cueille...cueillions cueilles...cueillez cueille...cueillent	je cueillis je cueillis	je cueillerai	cueille...cueillions cueilles...cueilliez cueille...cueillent
<i>to fail</i>	défaillir	défailli	nous...défaillions vous...défailliez ils...défaillent	je défailis ils défaillirent	..... je dormirai	..... dorme...dormions dormes...dormiez dorme...dorment
<i>to sleep</i>	dormir	dormi	dors...dormons dors...dormez dort...dorment	je dormis	je dormirai	dorme...dormions dormes...dormiez dorme...dorment
<i>to boil away</i>	ébouillir	ébouilli	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to fail</i>	faillir	failli	faux...faillions faux...failliez faut...faillent	je faillis je faillis	je faillirai	..... .....

<i>to sink</i>	férir	..... féru	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to flourish, to be in repute</i> ¶	fleurir	florissant	fleuri	fleuris... fleurissons fleuris... fleurissez fleurit... fleurissent	je fleuris  je fleurirai	fleurisse.... fleurissions fleurisses.... fleurissiez fleurisse.... fleurissent
<i>to fly</i>	fuir	fuyant	fui	fuis..... fuyons fuis..... fuyez fut..... furent	je fuis  je fuirai	fuite..... fuyions fuies..... fuyiez fuie..... furent
<i>to lie**</i>	gésir	gisant	.....	..... gisons ..... gisez git..... gisent	.....	.....
<i>to succeed ill</i>	mésavenir	.....	.....	il mésavait.....	il mésavint	qu' il mésavienne
<i>to die</i>	mourir	mourant	mort	meurs.... mourons meurs.... mourez meurt.... meurent	je mourus  je mourrai	meure.... mourlons meures.... mouriez meure.... meurent
<i>to heart†</i>	ouïr	..... ouï	.....	.....	j' ouïs	.....
<i>to open‡</i>	ouvrir	ouvrant	ouvert	ouvre.... ouvrons ouvres.... ouvrez ouvre.... ouvrent	j' ouvrirai	ouvre.... ouvrons ouvres.... ouvriez ouvre.... ouvrent
<i>to fetch&amp;&amp;</i>	quérir	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to project    </i>	sailtir	sailiant	sailti	il saille ils saillent	il sailtira ils sailtiront	qu' il saille qu' ils saillent

**\*\* Used only in the third person.**

+ The verb *faire* is generally used to conjugate this verb:  
as *faire bouillir*, &c.

at The imperfect of the indicative is used, *ie défaillais*.

⑧ The present of the indicative is seldom used.

|| The infinitive is used only in this phrase: *sans coup-férir*, without striking a blow.

¶ Used in the indicative imperfect: *florissait, florissaient*.

\*\* The imperfect of the indicative, *je grisais*, &c. is used.

†† This verb is seldom used—*entendre* being preferred. However, we say: *ouïr des témoins*; *les dimanches la messe ouïras*.

if The second person singular of the imperative takes no *s*, except when followed by *en* or *u*.

Used only in familiar conversation.

Used only in the third persons. *Qu' il saillât* is used.

## TABLE OF THE IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS—Continued.

## SECOND CONJUGATION—Concluded.

	<i>Infinitive present.</i>	<i>Participle present.</i>	<i>Participle past.</i>	<i>Indicative present.</i>	<i>Præterit definite.</i>	<i>Future absolute.</i>	<i>Subjunctive present.</i>
<i>to feel</i>	sentir	sentant	senti	sens ..... sentons sens ..... sentez sent ..... sentent	je sentis	je sentirai	sente ..... sentions sentes ..... sentiez sente ..... sentent
<i>to serve</i>	servir	servant	servi	sers ..... servons sets ..... servez sert ..... servent	je servis	je servirai	serve ..... servions serves ..... serviez serve ..... servent
<i>to obtain*</i>	sortir	sortissant	sorti	il sortit ils sortissent	.....	il sortira ils sortiront	qu' il sortisse qu' ils sortissent
<i>to land†</i> <i>to hold</i>	surgir tenir	..... tenant	..... tenu	tiens ..... tenons tiens ..... tenez tient ..... tiennent	..... je tins	..... je tiendrai	..... tienne ..... tenions tiennes ..... teniez tienne ..... tiennent
<i>to clothe</i>	vêtir	vêtant	vêtu	vêts ..... vêtons vêts ..... vêtez vét ..... vêtent	je vêtis	je vêtirai	vête ..... vêtions vête ..... vétiez vête ..... vêtent
<i>THIRD CONJUGATION.</i>							
<i>to appear†</i>	apparaître	.....	.....	il appert	.....	.....	.....
<i>to sit</i>	asseoir	asseyant	assis	assieds ..... asseyons assieds ..... asseyez assied ..... assieient	j' assis	j' assiérai	asseie ..... asseyions asseies ..... asseyiez asseie ..... assieient
<i>to fall</i>	choir	.....	chu	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to appear*</i>	comparaître	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....



<i>to decay</i> †	déchoir	déchoyant déchéant	déchu	déchois...déchoyons déchois...déchoyez déchoit...déchoient	je déchus	je décherrai	déchole...déchoyions décholes...déchoyiez déchoie...déchoient
<i>to make one desist</i>	démouvoir	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to fall to, to expire</i> ‡	échoir	échéant	échu	il échoit ( <i>sometimes</i> ) il échet	j' échus	j' écherrai	.....
<i>to be neces- sary</i>	falloir	.....	fallu	il faut	il fallut	il faudra	qu' il faille
<i>to move</i>	mouvoir	mouvant	mu	meus...mouvons meus...mouvez meut...mouvent	je mus	je mouvrai	meuve...mouvions meuves...mouviez meuve...mouvent
<i>to rain</i>	pleuvoir	pleuvant	plu	il pleut	il plut	il pleuvra	qu' il pleuve
<i>to provide</i>	pourvoir	pourvoyant	pourvu	pourvois pourvoyons pourvois pourvoyez pourvoit pourvoient	je pourvus	je pourvoirai	pourvois...pourvoyions pourvoies...pourvoyiez pourvoie...pourvoient
<i>to be able</i> ¶	pouvoir	pouvant	pu	puis...pouvons peux...pouvez peut...peuvent	je pus	je pourrai	puisse...puissions puisses...puissiez puisse...puissent
<i>to prevail</i>	prévaloir	prévalant	prévalu	prévaux...prévalons prévaux...prévalez prévaut...prévalent	je prévalus	je prévaudrai	prévale...prévalions prévales...prévaliez prévale...prévalent
<i>to foresee</i>	prévoir	prévoyant	prévu	prévois...prévoyons prévois...prévoyez prévoit...prévoient	je prévis	je prévoirai	prévois...prévoyions prévoies...prévoyiez prévoie...prévoient

\* Used only as a law term.

† Used figuratively only.

‡ The imperfect of the indicative is *je déchoyais*, &c.

‡ Used generally in the third person.

|| *Il fallait* is used. There is no imperative.¶ *Je peux* is also used. There is no imperative.

## TABLE OF THE IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS—Continued.

## THIRD CONJUGATION—Concluded.

<i>Infinitive present.</i>	<i>Participle present.</i>	<i>Participle past.</i>	<i>Indicative present.</i>	<i>Preterit definite.</i>	<i>Future absolute.</i>	<i>Subjunctive present.</i>
<i>to promote*</i>	promouvoir	.....	promu	.....	.....	.....
<i>to recover, to have again†</i>	ravoir	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to know‡</i>	savoir	sachant	sais ..... savons sais ..... savez sait ..... savent	je sus	je saurai	sache ..... sachiez sache ..... sachiez sache ..... sachent
<i>to become, to befit§</i>	seoir	seyant	il sied ils siéent	.....	il siéra ils siéront	qu' il siée qu' ils siéent
<i>to sit  </i>	seoir	séant	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to put off, to suspend</i>	surseoir	sursoyant	sursois ..... sursoyons sursois ..... sursoyez sursoit ..... sursoient	je sursis	je surseoirai	sursoie ..... sursoyions sursoies ..... sursoyiez sursoie ..... sursoient
<i>to be worth¶</i>	valoir	valant	vaut ..... valons vaut ..... valez vaut ..... valent	je valus	je vaudrai	vaile ..... valions vailles ..... valiez vaile ..... vaillent
<i>to see</i>	voir	voyant	vois ..... voyons vois ..... voyez voit ..... voient	je vis	je verrai	voie ..... voyions voies ..... voyiez voie ..... voient
<i>to be willing**</i>	vouloir	voulant	vieux ..... voulons vieux ..... voulez veut ..... veulent	je voulos	je voudrai	veuille ..... voulions veuilles ..... vouliez veuille ..... veuillent

## FOURTH CONJUGATION.

<i>to absolve</i>	absoudre	absolvant	absous, <i>m.</i> absous ..... absolvons absoute, <i>f.</i> absous ..... absolvez absout ..... absolvant	.....	j' absoudrai	absolve ..... absolvons absolves ..... absolviez absolve ..... absolvant
<i>to abstract</i>	abstraire	abstrayant	abstrait ..... abstrayons abstrais ..... abstrayez abstrait ..... abstrayant	.....	.....	.....
<i>to make one believe</i>	accroire	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to attract, to entice</i>	attirer	attirait	il attirait	.....	je battis	.....
<i>to beat</i>	battre	battu	bats ..... battons bats ..... battez bat ..... battent	.....	je battrais	batte ..... battions battes ..... battiez batte ..... battent
<i>to drink</i>	boire	buvant	bois ..... buvons bois ..... buvez boit ..... boivent	je bus	je boirai	boive ..... buvions boives ..... buviez boive ..... boivent
<i>to bray</i>	braire	.....	il braie ils braient	.....	il braira ils brairont	.....
<i>to roar, to rustle</i>	bruire	.....	il bruit	.....	.....	.....
<i>to circumcise</i>	circoncire	circoncissant	circoncis ..... circonçons circoncis ..... circonciez circoncit ..... circoncient	je circoncis	je circoncirai	circoncise ..... circonçons circoncises ..... circonciez circoncise ..... circoncient

¶ There is no imperative.

\*\* The second person plural of the Imperative has *veuillez*, please to.† Used only in the infinitive, and always with the verb *faire*.

‡ Obsolete.

§ Used in the third persons only.

|| The imperfect of the indicative is : *il bruyait, ils bruyaient*.

\* Only used in the infinitive, in compound tenses, and in the imperfect of the subjunctive.

† Used in the infinitive only.

‡ Imperative : *sache, sachez, sachez*. Sometimes in the first person of the indicative present, *je ne sache pas*. The imperfect of the indicative is : *je savais, &c.*

§ Used in the third person. It has no compound tenses.

|| Used in the two participles only.

## TABLE OF THE IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS—Continued.

## FOURTH CONJUGATION—Continued.

<i>Infinitive present.</i>	<i>Participle present.</i>	<i>Participle past.</i>	<i>Indicative present.</i>	<i>Preterit definite.</i>	<i>Future absolute.</i>	<i>Subjunctive present.</i>
<i>to close*</i>	clore	..... clos'	clos clos clot	..... je clorai	.....	.....
<i>to conclude</i>	conclure	concluant	conclus .. conclue conclus ... concluez conclut... concluent	je conclus	je conclurai	conclue..... conclusions conclues..... concluez conclue..... concluent
<i>to pickle</i>	confire	confisant	confis .. confisons confis..... confisez confit..... confisent	je confis	je confirai	confise..... confisions confises..... confisez confise..... confisent
<i>to sew</i>	coudre	cousant	couds..... cousons couds..... cousez coud..... cousent	je couds	je coudrai	couse..... cousions cousez..... cousez couse..... cousent
<i>to believe</i>	croire	croyant	crois..... croyons crois..... croyez croit..... croient	je crus	je croirai	croie..... croyions croies..... croyiez croie..... croient
<i>to grow</i>	croître	croissant	crois..... croissons crois..... croissez croît..... croissent	je crus	je croîtrai	croisse..... croissions croisses..... croissiez croisse..... croissent
<i>to discomfit</i>	déconfire	..... déconfit	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to say</i>	dire	disant	dis..... disons dis..... dites dit..... disent	je dis	je dirai	dise..... disions dises..... disiez dise..... disent

<i>to hatch, to blow</i>	éclore	.....	éclos	il éclôt ils éclosent	.....	il éclôra ils écloront	qu' il éclosa qu' ils éclosent
<i>to write</i>	écrire	écrivait	écrit	écrivait écrivait écrit.....	j' écrivais .....	j' écrirai .....	écrive..... écriviez..... écriviez.....
<i>to imbibe†</i>	s' emboire	.....	embu	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to follow, to result‡</i>	s' ensuivre	ensuivait	ensuivi	il s' ensuit ils s' ensuivent	il s' ensuivit ils s' ensuivirent	il s' ensuivra ils s' ensuivront	qu' il s' ensuive qu' ils s' ensuivent
<i>to be smitten*</i>	s' éprendre	.....	épris	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to make, to do</i>	faire	faisait	fait	fais..... fais..... fait.....	je fis .....	je ferai .....	fasse..... fassiez..... fassiez.....
<i>to forfeit, to trespass‡</i>	forfaire	.....	forfait	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to fry  </i>	frure	.....	frit	fris fris frit	.....	je frirai .....	.....
<i>to imbue</i>	imboire	.....	imbu	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to join</i>	joindre	joignait	joint	joins..... joins..... joint.....	je joignais .....	je joindrai .....	joigne..... joignez..... joignez.....
<i>to read</i>	lire	lisait	lu	lis..... lis..... lit.....	je lus .....	je lirai .....	lise..... lisez..... lisez.....

\* Used in all the compound tenses.

† Used in painting.

‡ Used only in the third persons of every tense.

§ Used in the compound tenses.

|| The verb *faire* is used to supply the persons and tenses that are wanting : as, *nous faisons frûre, &c.*

## TABLE OF THE IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS—Continued.

## FOURTH CONJUGATION—Continued.

	<i>Infinitive present.</i>	<i>Participle present.</i>	<i>Participle past.</i>	<i>Indicative present.</i>	<i>Preterit def- inite.</i>	<i>Future abso- lute.</i>	<i>Subjunctive present.</i>
<i>to shine</i>	luire	luisant	lui	luis.....luisons luis.....luissez luit.....luisent	.....	je luirai	luisse.....luisions luisse.....luissez luisse.....luisent
<i>to do mischief</i>	malfaire	malaisant	malfait	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to curse</i>	maudire	maudissant	maudit	maudis.....maudissons maudit.....maudissez maudit.....maudissent	je maudis	je maudirai	maudisse.....maudissions maudisses.....maudissiez maudisse.....maudissent
<i>to slander</i>	médire	médisant	médit	médis.....médisons médis.....médisez médit.....médissent	je médis	je médirai	médise.....médissions médises.....médissiez médise.....médissent
<i>to misdo*</i>	méfaire	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to put</i>	mettre	mettant	mis	mets.....mettons mets.....mettez met.....mettent	je mets	je mettrai	mette.....mettions mettes.....mettiez mette.....mettent
<i>to grind</i>	moudre	moulant	moulu	mouds.....moulons mouds.....moulez moud.....moulent	je mouds	je moudrai	moule.....moullions moules.....moulliez moule.....moulent
<i>to be born</i>	naître	naissant	né	naiss.....naissions naiss.....naissiez naît.....naissent	je naquis	je naîtrai	naisse.....naissions naisses.....naissiez naisse.....naissent
<i>to hurt</i>	nuire	nuisant	nuî	nuis.....nuisons nuis.....nuisez nuît.....nuisent	je nuisis	je nuirai	nuise.....nuisions nuises.....nuissiez nuise.....nuisent

<i>to gaze</i>	paître	paissant	pu	pais ..... paissons pais ..... paissez paît ..... paissent	..... je paurai	païse ..... païssions païses ..... païssiez païse ..... païssent
<i>to appear</i>	paraître	paraissant	paru	parais ..... paraissions parais ..... paraissez paraît ..... paraissent.	je parus je paraîtrai	paraïse ..... paraïssions paraïses ..... paraïssiez paraïse ..... paraïssent
<i>to please</i>	plaire	plaisant	plu	plais ..... plaisions plais ..... plaisez plaît ..... plaisent	je plus je plairai	plaise ..... plaisions plaises ..... plaisez plaise ..... plaisent
<i>to shoot forth, to dawn</i>	{ poindre	.....	.....	Il point	..... il poindra	.....
<i>to take</i>	prendre	prenant	pris	prends ..... prenons prends ..... prenez prend ..... prennent	je pris je prendrai	prenne ..... prenions prennes ..... preniez prenne ..... prennent
<i>to reduce</i>	réduire	réduisant	réduit	réduis ..... réduisons réduis ..... réduisez réduit ..... réduisent	je réduisis je réduirai	réduise ..... réduisions réduises ..... réduisiez réduise ..... réduisent
<i>to feed</i>	repaitre	repaissant	repu	repais ..... repaissions repais ..... repaissez repait ..... repaissent	je repus je repaîtrai	repaise ..... repaissions repaises ..... repaissiez repaise ..... repaissent
<i>to resolve, to dissolve†</i>	résoudre	résolvant	résolu résous	résous ..... résolvons résous ..... résolvez résout ..... résolvent	je résolus je résoudrai	résolve ..... résolvions résolve ..... résolviez résolve ..... résolvent
<i>to laugh</i>	rire	riant	ri	ris ..... rions ris ..... riez rit ..... rient	je ris je rirai	rie ..... rions ries ..... riez rie ..... rient

\* Used only in familiar conversation

† Résolu, resolved; résous, dissolved.



## TABLE OF THE IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS—Concluded.

## FOURTH CONJUGATION—Concluded.

	<i>Infinitive present.</i>	<i>Participle present.</i>	<i>Participle past.</i>	<i>Indicative present.</i>	<i>Preterit defi- nite.</i>	<i>Future abso- lute.</i>	<i>Subjunctive present.</i>
<i>to break</i>	rompre	rompant	rompu	romps.....rompons romps.....rompez rompt.....rompent	je rompis	je romprai	rompe.....rompions rompes.....rompiez rompe.....rompent
<i>to solve*</i>	soudre	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>to issue, to spout</i>	sourdre	.....	.....	il sourd ils sourdent	.....	.....	.....
<i>to suffice</i>	suffire	suffisant	suffi	suffis.....suffisons suffis.....suffisez suffit.....suffisent	je suffis	je suffirai	suffise.....suffisions suffises.....suffisiez suffise.....suffisent
<i>to follow</i>	suivre	suivant	suivi	suis.....suivons suis.....suivez suit.....suivent	je suivis	je suivrai	suive.....suivions suives.....suiviez suive.....suivent
<i>to milk</i>	traire	trayant	trait	trais.....trayons trais.....trayez trait.....traient	.....	je traitrai	traie.....trayions traies.....trayiez traie.....traient
<i>to conquer</i>	vaincre	vainquant	vaincu	vaincs...vainquons vaincs...vainquez vainc...vainquent	je vainquis	je vaincrai	vainque....vainquions vainques....vainquiez vainque....vainquent
<i>to live</i>	vivre	vivant	vécu	vis.....vivons vis.....vivez vit.....vivent	je vécus	je vivrai	vive.....vivions vives.....viviez vive.....vivent

\* Obsolete.

LIST OF ALL THE IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS IN THE FRENCH LANGUAGE  
NOT CONTAINED IN THE FOREGOING TABLE.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

CONJUGATE

LIKE

renvoyer.....to send back .....envoyer, p. 119  
s' en aller .....to go away .....aller, 119

SECOND CONJUGATION.

conquérir.....to conquer  
reconquérir.....to reconquer  
requérir.....to request  
s' enquerir.....to inquire

.....acquérir, 120

tressaillir.....to start up .....assaillir, 120

rebouillir.....to boil again .....bouillir, 120

accourir.....to hasten to

concourir.....to concur

discourir.....to talk about

encourir.....to incur

parcourir.....to run over

recourir.....to have recourse

secourir.....to succour

accueillir.....to welcome

recueillir.....to gather

se recueillir.....to recollect one's self

endormir.....to lull asleep

s' endormir.....to fall asleep

.....dormir, 120

SECOND CONJUGATION—Continued.

CONJUGATE

LIKE

redormir.....to sleep again  
se rendormir.....to fall asleep again

s' enfuir.....to run away .....fuir, 121

couvrir.....to cover

découvrir.....to uncover

entr'ouvrir.....to open a little

mésosfrir.....to underbid

offrir.....to offer

recouvrir.....to cover again

rouvrir.....to open again

souffrir.....to suffer

consentir.....to agree

départir.....to distribute

se départir.....to desist, to swerve

démentir.....to belie

mentir.....to lie

partir.....to set out

pressentir.....to foresee

repartir.....to set off again

repartir.....to reply

se repentir.....to repent

ressentir.....to resent

se ressentir.....to feel still

ressortir.....to go out again

sortir.....to go out

.....sentir, 122

LIST OF ALL THE IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS NOT CONTAINED IN THE  
FOREGOING TABLE—Continued.

FIRST CONJUGATION—Continued.

CONJUGATE	LIKE
desservir...to clear a table, to do an ill office	
se servir.....to make use	.....servir, 122
s' abstenir.....to abstain	
appartenir.....to belong to	
circumvenir.....to circumvent	
contenir.....to contain	
se contenir.....to refrain	
contrevénir.....to infringe	
convenir.....to suit, to agree	
déprévenir.....to unprepossess	
détenir.....to detain	
devenir.....to become	
disconvenir.....to deny	
entretenir.....to entertain	
s' entretenir.....to discourse with	
intervenir.....to intervene	
maintenir.....to maintain	
obtenir.....to obtain	
parvenir.....to arrive	
prévenir.....to prepossess, to forewarn	
provenir.....to proceed from	
redevenir.....to become again	
retenir.....to retain	
se retenir.....to forbear	
revenir.....to come back	
se ressouvenir.....to remember	
se souvenir.....to recollect	
soutenir.....to maintain	

SECOND CONJUGATION—Concluded.

CONJUGATE	LIKE
subvenir.....to provide for	
survenir.....to befall	
s' en tenir.....to abide by	.....tenir, 122
venir.....to come	
dévêtir.....to undress	
se dévêtir.....to divest one's self	
revêtir.....to clothe, to dress	
se vêtir.....to clothe one's self	.....vêtir, 122

THIRD CONJUGATION.

s' asseoir.....to sit down	.....asseoir, 122
rasseoir.....to sit down again	
se rasseoir.....to sit down again	
rechoir.....to fall again	.....choir, 122
ébranvoir.....to move, to stir up	
s' ébranvoir.....to be moved, to be concerned	.....mouvoir, 123
dépourvoir.....to deprive	.....pourvoir, 123
équivaloir.....to be equivalent	
revaloir.....to return like for like	.....prévaloir, 123
se prévaloir.....to take advantage	
messeoir.....to be unbecoming	.....seoir, 124
entrevoir.....to glimpse at	
s' entrevoir.....to see each other	.....voir, 124
revoir.....to see again	

## FOURTH CONJUGATION—Continued.

## LIKE

## CONJUGATE

dissoudre.....	to dissolve, to melt	absoudre, 125
abattre.....	to pull down	
s' abattre.....	to fall down	
se battre.....	to fight	
combattre.....	to fight, to combat	
débattre.....	to debate	
se débattre.....	to struggle	battre, 125
s' ébattre.....	to take one's pleasure	
enbahtrre.....	to lay the tire of a wheel	
se rabattre.....	to abate, to bring down	
rebattre.....	to turn about	
	to beat again	
reboire.....	to drink again	boire, 125
déclorre.....	to unclose	
enclore.....	to enclose	
forclore.....	to debar	clore, 126
exclure.....	to exclude	
reclure.....	to shut up	conclure, 126
décondre.....	to rip	
recoudre.....	to sew again	coudre, 126
mécroire.....	to disbelieve	croire, 126
accroître.....	to increase	
décroître.....	to decrease	
recroître.....	to grow again	croître, 126
surcroître.....	to grow out	
redire.....	to say again	dire, 126
circonscrire.....	to circumscribe	écrire, 127

décrire.....	to describe	
inscrire.....	to inscribe	
s' inscrire.....	to enter one's name in a register	
prescrire.....	to prescribe	écrire, 127
se prescrire.....	to lose by prescription	
proscrire.....	to proscribe, to outlaw	
récrire.....	to write again	
souscrire.....	to subscribe	
transcrire.....	to transcribe	
contrefaire.....	to imitate, to mimic	
défaire.....	to undo	
se défaire.....	to get rid	
parfaire.....	to perfect	
redéfaire.....	to undo again	faire, 127
refaire.....	to make again	
se refaire.....	to recover	
satisfaire.....	to satisfy	
surfaire.....	to ask too much	
refire.....	to fry again	fire, 127
adjoindre.....	to adjoin	
astreindre.....	to subject	
s' astreindre.....	to confine one's self	
atteindre.....	to overtake, to reach	
aveindre.....	to take out	
ceindre.....	to gird, to encompass	joindre, 127
complaindre.....	to complain to	
conjoindre.....	to conjoin	
contraindre.....	to constrain	
craindre.....	to fear, to be afraid	
déjoindre.....	to disjoin	



connaître . . . to know, to be acquainted with	
disparaître . . . . . to disappear	
méconnaître . . . . . to disown, not to know	
se méconnaître . . . . . to forget one's self	paraître, 129
reconnaître . . . . . to recognise, to be thankful	
reparaître . . . . . to appear again	
complaître . . . . . to humour, to please	
se complaire . . . . . to delight	
déplaître . . . . . to displease	
se déplaître . . . . . to be displeased with	plaître, 129
taire . . . . . to conceal, to keep secret	
se taire . . . . . to forbear talking	
apprendre . . . . . to learn, to hear of	
comprendre . . . . . to understand, to include	
déprendre . . . . . to loosen, to disengage	
désapprendre . . . . . to unlearn	
entreprendre . . . . . to undertake	
se méprendre . . . . . to mistake	
rapprendre . . . . . to learn again	
reprandre . . . . . to take again, to chide	
se reprendre . . . . . to correct one's self	
surprendre . . . . . to surprise, to astonish	prendre, 129
conduire . . . . . to conduct, to lead	
construire . . . . . to construct, to build	
cuire . . . . . to cook, to bake	
décuire . . . . . to render syrup more liquid	
déconstruire . . . . . to take to pieces	
déduire . . . . . to deduct	
détruire . . . . . to destroy	
se détruire . . . . . to kill one's self, to decay	
éconduire . . . . . to refuse, to discard	réduire, 129

enduire . . . . . to plaster, to do over	
induire . . . . . to induce	
instruire . . . . . to instruct	
introduire . . . . . to introduce	
produire . . . . . to produce, to bring forth	
reconduire . . . . . to conduct again	
reconstruire . . . . . to build again	réduire, 129
recuire . . . . . to bake again, to do again	
renduire . . . . . to plaster anew	
reproduire . . . . . to reproduce	
séduire . . . . . to seduce, to bribe	
traduire . . . . . to translate	
se repaître . . . . . to thirst after, to delight in	repaître, 129
se rire de . . . . . to laugh at	
sourire . . . . . to smile	rire, 129
corrompre . . . . . to corrupt	
dérompre . . . . . to break down	
interrompre . . . . . to interrupt	rompre, 130
poursuivre . . . . . to pursue, to prosecute	suivre, 130
abstraire . . . . . to abstract	
distraindre . . . . . to distract, to divert	
extraire . . . . . to extract	
entraîner . . . . . to darn	
retraire . . . . . to redeem an estate	traire, 130
soustraire . . . . . to subract, to deduct	
se soustraire . . . . . to avoid, to escape	
convaincre . . . . . to convince	vaincre, 130
revivre . . . . . to revive	
survivre . . . . . to survive, to outlive	vivre, 130

# IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

## EXERCISE XXXVI.

Will you go this evening into the country? I am going  
 soir à campagne? *f.*  
 to pay some visits, and if I be at liberty early I  
 — faire suis ...libre.. de bonne heure  
 shall certainly go home. Go there with thy brother. Go  
 chez moi.  
 and do that errand. Go there and put every thing  
 — commission, *f.* — mettre  
 in order. Let him go to church on holidays.  
 en art. *f.* — art. jours de fête.  
 By being loaded with scents, and particularly amber, he  
 à force d' être de odeur, surtout ambre,  
 offends the smell. They have woven silk and  
 ...sentir mauvais. de art.  
 cotton together, and made a very pretty  
 de art. en ont fait  
 stuff. I shall send <sup>2</sup>spring <sup>1</sup>flowers to those ladies. I  
 étoffe, *f.* des printanier *f.*  
 would go to Rome if I could. We would send back our horses.  
 pouvais.  
 Why do you go away so soon? My brother and sister went  
 yesterday to Boston. I will not go any more a-hunting.  
 plus à art. chasse, *f.*  
 Are they not going away? I would go with them, if I was not  
 engaged.  
 occupé.

# IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

## EXERCISE XXXVII.

May the name of that good king be blessed from generation to  
 generation! These trees blossomed twice every year  
 deux fois tout art. an, *pl.*  
 The arts and sciences flourished at Athens in the time of Pericles.  
 à Athènes Périclès.  
 Horace and Virgil flourished under the reign of Augustus. We  
 Virgile *m.* Auguste.  
 discovered from the top of the mountain a vast plain full of  
 découvrir haut *f.* rempli



<sup>2</sup>flowery <sup>1</sup>meadows. The empire of the Babylonians was long  
 fleurissant *m.* Babylonien  
 a flourishing one. We did not hate the man, but his vices.

Does she really hate that vain pomp, and all the parade of  
 pompe, *f.* appareil *art.*  
 grandeur.

## EXERCISE XXXVIII.

Take that water off the fire, it boils too fast. Do not  
 Retirer *f.* de dessus *m.* fort.  
 let <sup>2</sup>the <sup>3</sup>soup <sup>4</sup>boil-away so much. That sauce has  
 laisser pot ...tant... *f.* est  
<sup>2</sup>boiled-away too much. Boil that meat again, it has not  
 .. trop... Faites viande, *f.*  
 boiled <sup>2</sup>long <sup>1</sup>enough. He runs faster than I. I ran about use-  
 vite moi. —  
 lessly all the morning. We ran at the voice of that honest man,  
 matinée.  
 and assisted him. The moment he saw us in danger, he ran  
 ...Dès que... en  
 to us and delivered us. By conduct so whimsical, should  
 un *f.* bizarre,  
 we not contribute to our destruction? He discoursed so long on  
 concourir perte?  
 the immortality of the soul, and the certainty of another life, that  
 certitude, *f.*  
 he left nothing unsaid. If we were to act thus, we should  
 en arrière. ....agir....  
 certainly incur the displeasure of our parents. I would not have  
 disgrâce, *f.*  
 recourse to <sup>3</sup>so <sup>4</sup>base <sup>1</sup>a <sup>2</sup>method. Will men always run  
 moyen, *m.* *art.*  
 after shadows?  
 de *art.* chimère?

## EXERCISE XXXIX.

He was near losing his life in that encounter. He was  
 faillir perdre — *art.* rencontre, *f.*  
 near falling into the snare which was laid for him. His  
 donner on avait tendu — lui. —  
 strength <sup>2</sup>fails <sup>1</sup>him every day. Let us have something <sup>2</sup>to  
*art.* défaillir Donnez-nous —  
<sup>3</sup>eat <sup>1</sup>directly; we are fainting with fatigue and hunger. I  
 vite; de *faim.*  
 cannot meet him; he shuns me. When we know not how to  
 le; *sai\**

employ our time, we endeavour to fly from ourselves. Would  
chercher se — soi-même.  
he not avoid flatterers, if he knew all their falsehood? He  
fuir art. f.  
died by a <sup>2</sup>very <sup>3</sup>painful <sup>1</sup>disease. She died of grief for the  
de cruel maladie, f. chagrin de avoir  
loss of her son. He is dying. She was expiring with grief,  
perdu se mourir. ..se mourir.. de  
when the fear of death at last wrested her secret from her.  
crainte f. art. enfin arracher m. — lui.

## EXERCISE XL.

Send for the physician and follow exactly his advice. Go  
and fetch my cane. Every day he acquired celebrity by  
— canne, f. de art. f.  
works calculated to fix the attention of an <sup>2</sup>enlightened <sup>1</sup>public.  
des fait pour  
'That I would acquire riches at the expense of my honesty!  
des dépens probité! f.  
He had acquired by his merit great influence over the opinions  
vi. un f. sing  
of his contemporaries. I have inquired about that man every where,  
contemporain. de -là partout,  
and have not been able to hear any thing of him. Who <sup>3</sup>has  
je ... pu ... avoir de nouvelles ... en ...  
<sup>4</sup>requested <sup>2</sup>it of <sup>1</sup>you. Sesostris, king of Egypt, conquered a  
en —  
great part of Asia. The <sup>2</sup>formidable <sup>1</sup>empire which Alexander  
art. Alexandre  
conquered, did not last longer than his life. I have heard that  
ouï dire  
<sup>2</sup>important <sup>1</sup>news. He dressed himself in haste, and  
f. ...se vêtir .... à art. h asp. hâte, f.  
went out immediately. I wish she would dress the children  
sortir sur-le-champ. voudrais que ...vêtir....  
with more care. If his fortune permitted him, he would clothe  
le lui,  
all the poor of his parish. Two servants clothed him with his  
domestique revêtir de  
<sup>2</sup>ducal <sup>1</sup>mantle. He passed only for a traveller; but lately  
manteau. ne depuis peu  
he has assumed the character of an envoy. It begins to be very  
revêtir — envoyé.  
warm; it is time to throw off some clothing.  
de .....se dévêtir.....

## EXERCISE XLI.

I will gather, with pleasure, some of these flowers and fruits, since you wish to have some. Do not gather these peaches before  
 en. f.

they are ripe. That is a country where they <sup>3</sup>neither  
 que ne soient Ce pays on ni

<sup>2</sup>reap corn, nor gather grapes. We shall collect in <sup>2</sup>an-  
<sup>1</sup>ne recueillir blé, ni — vin. recueillir

cient <sup>1</sup>history <sup>4</sup>important <sup>5</sup>and <sup>6</sup>valuable <sup>3</sup>facts. He received us in  
 précieux accueillir de

<sup>3</sup>the <sup>4</sup>most <sup>5</sup>polite <sup>2</sup>manner. Poverty, misery, sickness, perse-  
<sup>1</sup>art.

cution, in a word, all the misfortunes in the world have fallen upon  
 en malheur de .accueillir .

him. If you give six inches to that cornice, it will project too  
 corniche, f.

much. That balcony projected too much; it darkened the dining  
 balcon, m. obscurcir

room. When Moses struck the rock, there gushed out of it  
 Moïse rocher, m. il .en.

a spring of <sup>2</sup>living <sup>1</sup>water. The blood gushed from his vein  
 source veine, f.

with impetuosity. We shall assault the enemy to-morrow in their  
 pl.

intrenchments. Were we not overtaken by a horrible storm?  
 retranchement. assailli tempête? f.

At every word that they said to him concerning his son, the good  
 à chaque de

old man leaped for joy. Will you not shudder with fear?  
 vieillard tressaillir de tressaillir de peur?

You may set out this morning, but remember to come back at night.  
 ce soir

## EXERCISE XLII.

Tell me what she has done to you; but, above all, do not lie.

<sup>2</sup>Were <sup>1</sup>I in your place, I would not offer her any money. Why  
 Si à de

do you not open the door for your sister? Your actions never belie  
 à

your words. Your brother repents much of having sold his books.  
 parole. avoir

I would serve him with all my heart, if I could. The more we  
 de —

are above others, the more it becomes us to be modest and  
 au-dessus des —  
 humble. My aunt and I came yesterday to see you, but  
 nous pour  
 you were not at home. I hope that you will keep your word  
 and come to-morrow. At last she has agreed to pay her an  
 que Enfin de  
 annual pension of two hundred francs. Come on Friday morning  
 —  
 at nine o'clock. You will obtain leave to go out another  
 art. permission  
 time, if you come back soon. The first time you come to see me,  
 que fut. —  
 I will keep you two or three days. He is so prepossessed against me,  
 that he will not agree that he is in the wrong. The first time I go  
 ..... a tort .....  
 out, remind me to call on your brother. That hat  
 1faire 2souvenir de passer chez  
 would suit you very well, if you were a little taller. I should not  
 suffer so much if it were fine weather.  
 faisait

## IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

### EXERCISE XLIII.

I had apartments that I liked; I will endeavour to have them again.  
 un logement de  
 Beware of falling. Since the publication of his last work, he has  
 much fallen in the esteem of the public. If he do not alter his  
 déchoir changer de —  
 conduct, he will decline every day in his reputation and credit.  
 .. déchoir .. de jour-en-jour de f. m.  
 He has put in the lottery, and he hopes that a capital prize  
 mis à loterie, f. — art. gros lot  
 will fall to him. That bill of exchange has expired. The  
 échoir lettre, f. change être échoir.  
 first term expires at midsummer. You have drawn on me a bill  
 terme à la Saint-Jean.  
 of exchange; when is it payable? I did not believe that I must  
 .. échoir il ? .. devoir  
 so soon take that journey. He must have sunk under  
 faire voyage. qu' il — succombât  
 the efforts of so many enemies.  
 .. tant .. de

## EXERCISE XLIV.

The spring which moves <sup>2</sup>the <sup>1</sup>whole machine is very ingenious,  
 ressort, *m.* tout *f.*  
 though very simple. Can you doubt that the soul, though it is  
 spiritual, moves the body at pleasure? That is a man  
 ne *subj. pr.* à sa volonté?  
 whom nothing moves. We were moved with fear and pity.  
 ne émouvoir. ému de  
 When the famous D'Aguesseau was promoted to the dignity of  
 célèbre  
 chancellor, all France showed the greatest joy. That bishop  
 chancelier, *art.* en témoigner *f.*  
 well deserved, by his talents and by his virtues, that the king should  
 mériter,  
 promote him to the dignity of primate. The people think that it  
 primat. *sing. croit*  
 rains frogs and insects at certain seasons. It will not rain to-  
 de *art.* en temps.  
 day, but I fear that it may rain to-morrow. Let us sit down upon  
 ne  
 the grass. Do not make so much noise, I cannot learn my  
 herbe, *f.* ...tant...  
 lesson. Do you know what has happened to her? No; I do  
 est  
 not know.

## EXERCISE XLV.

When he arrived at home, he was quite exhausted. The minister  
 chez lui, ..n' en pouvoir plus..  
 had so many people at his levee that I could not speak to him. Are  
 monde à audience  
 you afraid that he will not accomplish that affair? I  
 pouvoir, *subj. pr.* venir à bout de  
 know that he is not your friend, but I know likewise that he is  
 de *pl.* aussi ce  
 a man of probity. Let them know that their pardon depends on  
 bien. grâce de  
 their submission. I could wish that he knew his lessons a little  
 soumission.  
 better. Let us see if this <sup>2</sup>new-fashioned <sup>1</sup>gown becomes you, or  
 d'un nouveau goût robe, *f.*  
 not. Be assured that <sup>2</sup>too <sup>3</sup>gaudy <sup>1</sup>colours will not become you.  
 non. *art.* voyant *f.*  
 The head-dress which that lady wore became her very ill. These  
 coiffure lui

colours become you so well, that you would do wrong to wear  
 ...avoir tort.... de en porter  
 any others. Set that child in this arm-chair, and take care lest  
 de prendre garde que  
 he fall. I will sit down on the top of that hill, whence I  
 ne sommet  
 shall discover a prospect no less magnificent than diversified. We  
 —découvrir.. scène, *f.* aussi varié.  
 were seated on the banks of the Thames, whence we were contem-  
 bord Tamise, *f.*  
 plating myriads of vessels, which carry every year the  
 de *art.* millier apporter *art.* *pl*  
 riches of the two hemispheres.

## EXERCISE XLVI.

See the <sup>2</sup>admirable <sup>1</sup>order of the universe: does it not announce a  
<sup>2</sup>supreme <sup>1</sup>architect? Has he again seen with pleasure his country  
 artisan?

and his friends? Had he had a glimpse of the dawn of this fine day?  
 aurore

To finish their affairs, it would be necessary for them to  
 Pour .....falloir..... que — — —

see one another. I clearly foresaw, from that time, all the  
 ils s'entrevoir, *subj. im.* bien ....dès-lors.....

obstacles he would have to surmount. Would you wish that  
*m.* que surmonter.

the judge should put off the execution of the sentence that he had  
 arrêt

pronounced? I shall not put off the pursuit of that affair. If  
 rendu? poursuite *art.*

men do not provide for it, God will provide for it. Would this book  
 ..y..

be good for nothing? You have not paid for this ground more than  
 valoir — — terre, *f.*

it is worth; are you afraid that it is not worth six hundred  
 ne ..ne *subj. pr.*

pounds? One ounce of gold is equivalent to fifteen ounces of  
 livres sterling? once, *f.*

silver. Doubt not that reason and truth will prevail  
*art.* *art.* ne ..*subj. pr.*

at last. I can and will tell the truth. If you are willing, he  
 la longue. le

will be willing too. Be so good as to lend me your grammar.  
 .e ....Vouloir.... — .

## EXERCISE XLVII.

If I would, I could soon know whether Mrs. D. has seen your aunt,  
si  
 or not. The last time I was in the park, I could not distinguish her,  
 on account of the trees that were between her and me; I have only  
 ..à cause..  
 been able to have a glimpse of her. When you know your lesson,  
saurez  
 come and repeat it to me. Did you not know that Mr. A. was to  
 — répéter —  
 marry Miss B.? I knew it, but was not willing to tell your brother of  
 épouser parler à  
 it. He who cannot command himself, is incapable of commanding  
se  
 others. We ought to make a <sup>2</sup>judicious <sup>1</sup>choice of those  
 aux devoir judicieux choix, m. —  
 friends, to whom we intend to give our confidence. Do you know  
vouloir  
 where Miss B. lives? Yes, I do; and I see her every  
 demeurer? — le sais;  
 day at her window. Why will you not tell it me? Some told me  
 that your brother could not pay me; others told me that he would  
 not. We regularly pay all that we owe; but he says that he will pay  
 nobody. You saw with what goodness she received him. Every  
 body thinks, that, if they had pursued the enemy briskly, they  
vigoureusement,  
 might have ended the war on that day. If you want  
finir — La avoir besoin de  
 that book you may take it; it is at your service. May I go and see  
 —  
 him? Yes, you may; but come back as soon as you can.  
le aussitôt que fut.

IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS OF THE  
 FOURTH CONJUGATION.

## EXERCISE XLVIII.

Wood which is burned resolves itself into ashes and smoke.  
 Art. on brûler se résoudre en en  
 Have they resolved on peace or war? The fog has resolved  
 on — art. f. art. f. m.



itself into rain. Could that judge so lightly absolve the guilty ?  
 légèrement coupable ? *pl*  
<sup>2</sup>Strong <sup>1</sup>waters dissolve metals. Those drugs were  
*Art.* *art.* On *drogue*  
 dissolved before they were put into that medicine. My  
 avant de les — *inf. pr.* remède, *m.*  
 sister was sewing <sup>2</sup>all <sup>4</sup>day <sup>1</sup>yesterday. That piece is not  
<sup>3</sup>la journée  
 well sewed, it must be sewed over again. Unstitch that lace,  
 la ..... *inf. pr.* ..... dentelle, *f.*  
 and sew it again very carefully. Does he set a great  
 avec beaucoup de soin mettre  
 value upon riches ? I never admitted those principles. Has he  
 prix, *m.* à *art.*  
 committed that fault ? If he would take my advice he would resign  
 faute ? *f.* ..... me en croyait ..... se demettre de  
 his charge in favour of his son. His <sup>5</sup>arm <sup>1</sup>he put out of joint  
*f.* en <sup>4</sup>Le — .. <sup>2</sup>se <sup>3</sup>démettre.  
 yesterday. I will omit nothing that depends on me, to  
 de ce de pour  
 serve you. God frequently permits the wicked to prosper.  
 souvent que méchants .. *subj. pr.* ..  
 Put this book in its place again. Under whatever form of govern-  
 à *f.* quelque gouverne-  
 ment you may live, remember that your first duty is to be  
 ment que devoir de  
 obedient to the laws. It frequently happens that fathers transmit  
 soumis *art.*  
 to their children both their vices and their virtues. He has long  
 —  
 meddled with <sup>2</sup>public <sup>1</sup>affairs ; but his endeavours have not been  
 s'entremettre de efforts  
 crowned with success.  
 de

## EXERCISE XLIX.

I took great pains : but, at last, I ground all the coffee. Grind  
 beaucoup de *sing.* enfin, café, *m.*  
 those razors with care. Those knives are just ground. This grain  
 rasoir venir d'être  
 is not sufficiently ground, it should be ground again. I wish  
 assez falloir le ..... *inf. pr.* .....  
 that you would take courage. What news have you learned ?  
 Philosophy comprehends logic, ethics  
*art.* *art.* *f.* *art.* morale, *f. s.* *art.*

physics, and metaphysics. It is with difficulty that he  
 physique, *f. s.* *art.* *f. s.* Ce ..difficilement..  
 divests himself of his opinions. I fear you will undertake  
 ..se déprendre..  
 que ne ....*subj. pr.*....  
 a task above your strength. Could he have been mistaken  
 tâche au-dessus de *pl.*  
 so grossly? I reproved him continually for his faults, but to no  
 reprendre sans cesse de défaut, ..inu-  
 purpose. We surprised the enemy, and cut them to pieces. In  
 lement. *pl.* tailler en à  
 the middle of the road the axletree of our carriage broke. Bad  
 essieu se rompre. *art.*  
 company corrupts the minds of young people. Why do you inter-  
*pl.* *sing.* *gens.*  
 upt your brother, when you see him busy?  
 occupé?

## EXERCISE I.

For a long while <sup>1</sup>we <sup>2</sup>followed that method, which was calculated  
 ...<sup>3</sup>long-temps..  
*f.* ne propre  
 only to mislead us. What is the consequence? See the errors  
 égarer Que ....s' ensuivre ?.....  
 that have sprung from this proposition, which appeared so true?  
 s' ensuivre  
 We pursued our course when some cries, which came from the  
 suivre chemin lorsque *des* ....sortis....  
 midst of the forest, excited terror in our souls. The Greeks  
 fond porter *art.* *f.* Grec  
 vanquished the Persians at Marathon, Salamis, Platea, and Mycale.  
 Perse Salamine, Platée,  
 I have, at last, convinced him, by <sup>3</sup>such <sup>4</sup>powerful <sup>2</sup>reasons, of  
 si fort <sup>1</sup>des  
 the greatness of his fault, that I have no doubt but he  
 énormité *f.* ne douter nullement que ne  
 will repair it. It is during winter that they thrash the corn,  
 . *subj. pr.* . l'e pendant *art.* on battre  
 in <sup>3</sup>cold <sup>2</sup>countries. The enemy was so completely beaten in  
<sup>1</sup>*art.* *m.* *pl.*  
 that engagement, that he was forced to abandon thirty leagues of the  
 rencontre, de lieue —  
 country." The cannon beat down the tower. They were fighting  
 canon abattre tour, *f.*  
 with unexampled fury, when a <sup>2</sup>panic <sup>1</sup>terror made  
 un <sup>2</sup>sans <sup>3</sup>exemple <sup>1</sup>acharnement  
 them take flight, and dispersed them in an instant. Beat  
 leur *art.* fuite, *f.*

these mattresses again. Happy are those who live in solitude!

*art. retraite!*

He did not long survive a person who was so dear to him.

*a f.*

Fathers live again in their children. He was in a strange *Art.*

dejection of mind; but the news which he has received has  
accablement ont fait

revived him.

*inf. pr.*

## EXERCISE LI.

What will you have him do? Do not make so much  
Que vouloir — que — il *subj. pr.*

noise. Do they never exact? That woman mimicked all the  
de

persons whom she had seen; this levity rendered her odious. It  
que légèreté

was with difficulty he divested himself of the false opinions  
peine que ... se défaire... *f.*

which had been given him in his infancy. Could it be possible  
on — lui *f.*

that we should not again make a journey to Paris, Rome and  
...refaire... le — voyage de

Naples? He says that you have offended him, and that if you do  
not satisfy him quickly, he will find means to satisfy

promptement, *art. moyen, m. de se*

himself. Every night, she milked her goats, which gave  
lui même. *art. soir, pl.*

her a great quantity of wholesome milk. Have you milked  
lui ....<sup>2</sup>abondant.... <sup>3</sup>et <sup>4</sup>sain <sup>1</sup>lait, *m.*

your goats? Are the cows milked? Salt is good to entice  
chèvre? vache attirer

pigeons. You will never know the nature of bodies,  
*art.* connaître *art.*

if you do not abstract their <sup>2</sup>accidental <sup>1</sup>qualities from those which  
are inherent in them. The least thing diverts his attention.

.. leur .. moindre ..... le distraire .....

Will you not extract that charming passage? Have you darned  
your gown? Should he not redeem that land? What! would

Quoi!

you that I should screen those guilty persons from the rigour of the  
.. soustraire.. — à *f.*

laws?

## EXERCISE LII.

Was not Virgil born at Mantua? It is from that <sup>2</sup>poisoned <sup>1</sup>source  
 Mantoue? Ce empoisonné *f*.  
 that have arisen all the <sup>2</sup>cruel <sup>1</sup>wars that have desolated the universe  
 sont né *f*.  
 The fable says, that as soon as Hercules had cut off one of the heads  
*f*. Hercule *f*  
 of the Hydra others sprang up. While their <sup>2</sup>united  
 Hydre <sup>4</sup>de <sup>5</sup>autre <sup>1</sup>il <sup>2</sup>en <sup>3</sup>renaître. Tandis que réuni  
<sup>1</sup>flocks fed on the <sup>2</sup>tender <sup>3</sup>and <sup>4</sup>flowery <sup>1</sup>grass, they sung under  
*m.* paître — *f.* à  
 the shade of a tree the sweets of <sup>2</sup>rural <sup>1</sup>life. Your horses  
 ombre douceur *art.* champêtre  
 have not fed to-day; you must have <sup>1</sup>them fed.  
 repaître d'aujourd'hui; <sup>2</sup>faire *inf. pr*  
 He is a man who thirsts <sup>2</sup>after nothing <sup>1</sup>but blood and slaughter.  
 Ce ne se repaître de — que carnage.  
 Young people tell what they do, old people what they have done,  
*Art.* gens vieillards  
 and fools what they intend to do. You may set out when  
 sot se proposer de  
 you please; we will follow you  
 il vous plaire, *fut. s.*

## EXERCISE LIII.

The thunder which roared from afar announced a <sup>2</sup>dreadful  
*m.* bruire dans *art.* lointain  
<sup>1</sup>storm. They heard roar the waves of an <sup>2</sup>agitated <sup>1</sup>sea. That  
 orage, *m.* On flot *f*.  
 street is too noisy for those who love retirement and study. I  
*f.* bruyant *art.* retraite  
 have a glimpse of something that shines through those trees.  
 ..... entrevoir ..... au travers de  
 A ray of hope shone upon us in the midst of the misfortunes  
 rayon, *m.* — à milieu  
 which overwhelmed us. Every thing is well rubbed in that house;  
 accabler frotté  
 every thing shines, even the floor. Would he not have  
 y reluire, jusque à plancher, *m.*  
 injured you in that affair? Will you preserve these peaches with  
 confire à  
 sugar, with honey, or with brandy? Did you pickle  
*art. m.* *art. m.* *art. f.*

cucumbers,                      purslain, and                      sea-fennel? If he  
 des concombres, *m. de art.* pourpier, *m.*                      de *art.* perce-pierre? *f.*  
 loses his law-suit, all his property will not suffice.  
                     procès, *m.*                      bien, *m.*

## EXERCISE LIV.

Always speak                      truth, but with discretion.                      Never contradict  
                     dire *art.*                      *f.*  
 any one in public.                      You thought you were serving me in speak-  
 personne                      —                      —                      *inf.*  
 ing thus: well, let it be so; you                      shall not be contradicted.  
                     eh! bien, .....soit....                      en                      .....dédire.....  
 What! would you forbid him all communication with his friends?  
 Quoi!                      interdire  
 That woman who slandered                      every one, soon lost all kind  
                     de                      espèce, *f.*  
 of                      respect.                      You had foretold that event.                      Let us curse no  
                     considération.  
 one; let us remember that our law forbids us to curse even  
                     se rappeler                      défendre                      de  
 those who persecute us.                      Write every day the reflections which  
 you make on the books                      you read.                      Did he not read that <sup>2</sup>in-  
                     que  
 teresting <sup>1</sup>history with a great deal of pleasure?                      God is an <sup>2</sup>infinite  
<sup>1</sup>being who                      is circumscribed neither by                      time nor place.  
                     être                      ne                      ni                      *art.*                      *m.*                      lieu, *m.*  
 Will you not describe in that episode the <sup>2</sup>dreadful <sup>1</sup>tempest which  
                     horrible  
 assailed your hero?                      Get <sup>2</sup>those <sup>3</sup>soles <sup>4</sup>and <sup>5</sup>whittings <sup>4</sup>fried.  
                     Faire                      sole                      merlan                      *inf. pr.*  
 If you wish to form your taste, read over and over, unceasingly,  
                     vouloir —                      sans-cesse,  
 the ancients.                      He was elected by a great majority of voices. We  
                     a  
 have laughed heartily, and                      have resolved to go on. He  
                     de bon cœur,                      nous                      de continuer.  
 did not answer him any thing: but he smiled at him, as a  
                     lui                      ...rien...                      —                      lui, en --  
 sign of approbation, in the <sup>2</sup>kindest <sup>1</sup>manner.  
                     de                      gracieux                      air, *m.*

## EXERCISE LV.

Seated under the shade of palm-trees, they were milking their goats  
                     à                      palmier,  
 and ewes, and <sup>2</sup>merrily <sup>1</sup>drinking that nectar, which was renewed  
                     brebis,                      avec joie                      *m.*                      se renouveler

every day. Should they not have drunk with ice? This  
à art. f.  
window does not shut well; when you have made some alterations  
réparation  
in it, it will shut better. He had scarcely closed his eyes  
..y.. mieux. à peine — art.  
when the noise which they made at his door awoke him. Have  
que on à réveiller  
they not enclosed the suburbs within the city? Will you en-  
on faubourg f.  
close your park with a wall, or a hedge? Put the eggs of  
parc de mur, m. haie? f. œuf  
those silk-worms in the sun, that they may hatch. Those  
vers-à-soie, m. à  
flowers, just blown, spread the sweetest fragrance.  
nouvellement répandre parfum, m.  
When did they conclude this treaty? His enemies managed  
traité? m. faire  
so well, that he was unanimously excluded from the company.  
unaniment  
Did you think me capable of <sup>3</sup>so <sup>4</sup>black <sup>1</sup>an <sup>2</sup>act? He possesses  
croire traité? m. avoir  
some knowledge; but not so much as he thinks.  
savoir; m. ... il s'en fait trop accroire...

## CHAPTER VI.

### OF THE PARTICIPLE.

207. The *participle* is a part of the verb which partakes of the properties both of a verb and an adjective: of a verb as it has its signification and regimen; of an adjective, as it expresses the quality of a person, or thing.

208. There are two participles: the *participle present*, and the *participle past*.

### OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

209. The *participle present* always terminates in *ant*: as, *parlant*, *finissant*, *recevant*, *vendant*.

210. It always expresses an action, and is indeclinable: as,

Une montagne *dominant* sur  
des plaines immenses.

A mountain *commanding im-*  
*mense plains.*

Je vois des hommes *venant* à  
nous.

I see men *coming to us.*

211. What grammarians call the *gerund*, is nothing but the participle present with the preposition *en* prefixed to it: as, *on se forme l'esprit en lisant de bons livres*, we form our minds by reading good books.

212. There are adjectives which are spelled like the participle present; but as they imply merely an attribute of the noun, and do not express an action, and moreover agree with their substantives in gender and number, it will not be difficult to distinguish them from it. Thus:

Je vois des agneaux *bondis-*  
*sant* (*part.*) dans la plaine.

I see lambs *skipping in the*  
*plain.*

J' aime à voir les agneaux  
*bondissans* (*adj.*) errer dans la  
plaine.

I like to see *skipping lambs*  
*ramble in the plain.*

213. The first sentence of the preceding example conveys the idea that the lambs are *now* engaged in the act of skipping; while the second merely implies that it is an attribute, or propensity, of lambs to skip.

### EXERCISE LVI.

This woman is of good disposition, obliging every one, whenever  
un caractère, tout le monde, quand

she has it in her power. They go cringing before the great,  
.....le peut..... ramper devant pl.

that they may be insolent to their equals. The state of  
afin de — *inf. pr.* avec égal.

pure nature is that of the savage, living in the desert, but living in

his family, knowing his children, loving them, making use of  
famille, *f. connaître* .....user.....

speech, and making himself understood. An agreeable  
*art. parole, f.* .....se faire entendre.....

languor, imperceptibly laying hold of my senses, suspended the  
langueur, *f. insensiblement* s'emparer sens,

activity of my soul, and I fell asleep. Time is a real blunderer,  
s'endormir. vrai brouillon.

placing, replacing. ordering, disordering, impressing, erasing, ap-  
mettre, ranger,



proaching, removing, and making all things good and bad; and  
rendre  
almost always making them impossible to be known again. She  
.....méconnaissable.....  
met your father as she was coming here. My mother was  
.....en..... on  
told the day before yesterday that your sister, remembering  
dire à .....avant hier..... se ressouvenir de  
the injuries she had received from your brother, refused to see him.  
que

## OF THE PARTICIPLE PAST.

214. The participle past has various terminations : as,  
*aimé, fini, reçu, ouvert, dissous, &c.*

(215.) When accompanied by the auxiliary verb *être*,  
it always agrees in gender and number with its *subject*. as,

Mon frère est tombé. *My brother is fallen.*

Ma sœur est tombée. *My sister is fallen.*

Mes sœurs sont tombées. *My sisters are fallen.*

(216.) When it follows the verb *avoir*, it never agrees  
with its *subject*.

217. But it agrees with its *object direct*, when that ob-  
ject is placed *before* it : as, when speaking of

*my sister* : Je l'ai vue. *I have seen her.*

*your books* : Je les ai lus. *I have read them.*

*my sisters* : Je les ai vues. *I have seen them.*

218. And does not agree with its *object direct*, when  
that object is placed *after* it : as,

J'ai vu ma sœur. *I have seen my sister.*

J'ai lu vos livres. *I have read your books.*

J'ai vu mes sœurs. *I have seen my sisters.*

219. It never agrees with its *object indirect*, whether  
placed *before* or *after* it : as,

C'est la lettre dont je vous ai parlé. *This is the letter of which I have  
spoken to you.*

Je vous ai parlé de cette lettre. *I have spoken to you of this  
letter.*

220. The participle past of an impersonal verb is  
always indeclinable : as,

Les pluies qu' il a *fait*.  
Les chaleurs qu' il y a *eu*.

*The rains which we have had.*  
*The heats which we have had.*

221. In the compound tenses of verbs *essentially pronominal*, that is, of those verbs which cannot be conjugated without two pronouns, the participle past always agrees with its *object*, which always precedes it: as,

Elle s' est *moquée* de vous.  
Elles se sont *repenties*.

*She has laughed at you.*  
*They have repented.*

222. There is but one exception to this rule, which is the verb *s' arroger*: as, *ils se sont arrogé des droits*, they have assumed rights.

223. The participle past of the verbs *accidentally pronominal*, that is, of those which can be conjugated with a single pronoun, has the same rules as the participle past of verbs not pronominal, as stated in articles 217, 218, 219, ante: as,

art. 217: *Lucrèce s' est tuée*.

*Lucretia has killed herself.*

art. 218: *Ils se sont partagé l' empire*.

*They have apportioned the empire among themselves.*

art. 219. *Ils se sont parlé*.

*They have spoken to each other.*

## EXERCISE LVII.

ON THE PARTICIPLE PAST ACCOMPANIED BY THE VERB *être*.

Fire-arms were not known to the ancients. Heaven is that  
*Art.* armes-à-feu de  
<sup>2</sup>permanent <sup>1</sup>city, into which the just are to be received after this  
 cité, *f.* .... où .... devoir  
 life. In <sup>3</sup>Abraham's <sup>2</sup>time the threatenings of the true God  
 De <sup>1art.</sup> *f.*  
 were dreaded by Pharaoh; but, in the time of Moses, all na  
 redouter de Pharaon; Moïse, *art.*  
 tions were corrupted, and the world which God has made to ma  
 pervertir, pour  
 nifest his glory, had become a temple of idols. That <sup>2</sup>dreadful <sup>1</sup>crisis  
 terrible crise. *f.*  
 which threatened the state with <sup>2</sup>instant <sup>1</sup>destruction, was happily  
 de prochain *f.*  
 soon past. She is come to bring us all kinds of refreshments.  
 passer. — sorte, *f.* rafraichissement.  
 My brothers are gone to Dover, and intend to pay you a visit  
 Douvres, se proposer de rendre —

when they are come back. The houses which are built in the winter  
*fut. ..revenir.. f. —*  
 are not so wholesome as those which are begun in the spring and  
*sain à*  
 finished in the middle of summer. <sup>3</sup>Virtuous <sup>2</sup>people are  
*à art. 1art.*  
 esteemed and respected, even by those who are not so.  
*même de le.*

## EXERCISE LVIII.

ON THE PARTICIPLE PAST ACCOMPANIED BY THE VERB *avoir*, AND  
 FOLLOWED, OR PRECEDED, BY ITS OBJECT DIRECT.

All the letters which I have received, confirm that <sup>2</sup>important <sup>1</sup>news.  
*f. f.*  
 The <sup>2</sup>agitated <sup>1</sup>life which I have led till now, makes me sigh for  
*mener après*  
 retirement. The sciences which you have studied, will prove  
*art. retraite, f. être*  
 infinitely useful to you. What fortunes has not this revolution  
 —  
 ruined! What tears has she not shed; what sighs has she  
*renverser! Que de verser;*  
 not heaved! The language in which Cicero and Virgil have written,  
*pousser! f. — Cicéron*  
 will live in their works. She has taken the resolution of going into  
*par f. à*  
 the country. I am very sorry for the trouble this affair has  
*f. de peine, f. que*  
 given to your aunt. The letter which you have written to me in  
 —  
 French was well enough; I have shown it to your aunt, who <sup>2</sup>is  
<sup>3</sup>much <sup>4</sup>pleased with it. I have not yet received the goods  
*très content ..1en.. marchandise, f.*  
 which you sent me. Ladies, have you returned him the letters  
*Mesdames, rendre*  
 which he had desired you to read? Where did you buy those  
*prier de*  
 gloves? I bought them in France. Alexander conquered Asia  
*art*  
 with the troops which his father Philip had disciplined. The faults  
 which he had committed, <sup>2</sup>greatly <sup>1</sup>increased his prudence. He has  
*beaucoup augmenter f.*  
 spent all the treasures which his father had amassed with so much  
*trésor, m.*  
 care and labour. I have not forgotten the good services which you

have done to my mother. The reasons which you have given us  
 rendre  
 have satisfied us. I have lost my books. What books have you  
 lost? The fine actions your brothers have done, will be trans-  
 que  
 mitted to posterity.  
 art.

## EXERCISE LIX.

## ON THE PARTICIPLE PAST OF IMPERSONAL VERBS.

The great changes which have taken place in the administration  
 changement .....y avoir.....  
 have astonished many people. The heavy rains which we have had  
 bien grand f.  
 in the spring, have been the cause of many diseases. The scarcity  
 a disette, f.  
 which there was <sup>3</sup>last <sup>2</sup>winter, has afforded the opportunity of  
 1art. donner occasion  
 doing much good. What news has reached you? How many  
 bien. sing. est-il venir ....Que.... de  
 imprudent steps were taken on that occasion! How many  
 faux démarche, f. se faire en  
 large ships have been built in England within these fifty years! The  
 gros se construire depuis —  
 storm which we had yesterday has done a great deal of damage  
 tempête, f. causer dommage  
 to our ships. The high winds which they have had in the county  
 grand comté  
 of Lancaster, have blown down many houses and trees.  
 renverser

## EXERCISE LX.

## ON THE PARTICIPLE PAST OF PRONOMINAL VERBS.

The death which Lucretia gave herself has immortalized her. The  
 f. ..se donner.. immortaliser  
 cities which those nations have built for themselves are but a  
 ville, f. peuple .....se bâtir.....  
 collection of huts The chimeras which she has got  
 amas, m. chaumière. chimère, f. se mettre  
 into her head pass all belief. The Amazons made them-  
 — art. croyance, f. ..se rendre..  
 selves famous by their courage. The city of London has made  
 ..... célèbre

itself, by its commerce, the metropolis of the universe. Men  
*m.* *Art.*  
 built themselves cities. That woman has bestowed on herself  
 .....se bâtir..... .....se donner.....  
 fine gowns. She has cut two of her fingers. I have  
 de se couper — —  
 given myself a great deal of trouble. They have made an  
 peine, *f.* se donner —  
 appointment. My sisters have quarrelled the whole day, but are  
 rendez-vous. se quereller  
 now reconciled. He is the man of whom our neighbours have  
 Ce ..dout..  
 complained. We saw ourselves surrounded by more than twenty  
 se plaindre. entourer  
 persons. We had thought ourselves able to resist them, but  
 .....se croire..... de leur,  
 we have been deceived. She took pleasure in contradicting  
 ..se tromper.. se plaire à  
 me. Some of our <sup>2</sup>modern <sup>1</sup>authors have imagined  
 Quelques-uns s'imaginer que  
 they surpassed the ancients.

## CHAPTER VII.

## OF THE ADVERB.

**224.** In the simple tenses, the adverb is generally placed after the verb; and, in the compound tenses, between the auxiliary and the participle: as,

Il se porte bien. *He is well.*  
 Il s' est bien porté. *He has been well.*

**225.** Compound adverbs, and those which are derived from adjectives, are always placed after the verb: as,

C' est à la mode. *That is fashionable.*  
 Il a agi conséquemment. *He has acted consistently.*

**226.** Adverbs of order, rank, and those which express a determinate time, are placed either before or after the verb: as,

Nous devons *premièrement* faire notre devoir; *secondement* chercher les plaisirs permis.

We ought, *first*, to do our duty; *secondly*, to enjoy lawful pleasures.

*Aujourd'hui* il fait beau; il pleuvra peut-être *demain*.

To-day it is *fine*; it will rain, perhaps, to-morrow.

227. The adverbs *comment*, *où*, *d'où*, *par où*, *comment*, *pourquoi*, *quand*, used with or without interrogation are always placed before the verb which they modify: as,

*Comment* vous portez-vous?

*How* do you do?

*Où* allez-vous?

*Where* are you going?

228. The adverb is always placed before the adjective which it modifies: as,

C'est une femme *fort* belle, *très* sensible, et *infiniment* sage.

She is a woman *very* beautiful, of great sensibility, and infinitely prudent.

229. *Beaucoup* is not, as in English, susceptible of being modified by any adverb: thus, we do not say, *très beaucoup*, *trop beaucoup*, &c.

230. *Bien*, when it precedes another adverb, means *very*, *much*, &c.: as,

*Bien* moins. *Much* less.

*Bien* tard. *Very* late.

231. But when it is placed after the adverb, it signifies *well*: as,

*Assez bien*. *Pretty well*.

*Fort bien*. *Very well*.

## EXERCISE LXI.

We do not expect him to-day. If it be fine weather, I shall be back this day se'nnight. I shall be glad to see you this day fortnight, if I am well. This day week I was at your house. A  
...chez vous...

year hence you will be able to speak French tolerably well. He  
...pouvoir...

has as much money and as many friends as you. I was so much the more persuaded of what you told me, that I dismissed him this day three weeks. My sister has just as much wit, and is just as

amiable as yours. Hats off, gentlemen, and sit down. There is a man below, whom you will see with pleasure. Though we said it for fun, he was very angry with us. He has much increased his fortune. *contre* Sir, I have done my exercise. Well and good. *thème.* A la bonne heure. My father has bought a horse very cheap. They wandered to and fro without knowing whither to go. Some went to London *Les uns* in a coach, others on horseback. How far is it hence to *en — art. à* Dover? How long will it be before you send me back the *Douvres?* Dans combien de temps books I loaned you? They run up and down all day, and <sup>2</sup>do nothing but play. I know how that happened: talk no more of *ne* it. I will call upon you to-morrow, and the day after we will *passer chez* go and see my uncle. We will pay you the day after to-morrow, if we can. My brother often speaks with a double meaning. You have put on your waistcoat the wrong side outwards. My *mettre* brother and yours work in emulation of one another. Whatever may happen, I do not care for it. He did it in the twinkling of an eye. *se soucier*

## EXERCISE LXII.

This morning I awoke suddenly, but I soon fell asleep again. *s' éveiller* Let every one speak in his turn, for if you speak all together, how *Que à* can I hear what you say? They demolished the house from top to bottom. How long, O Catiline, will you abuse our pa- *Catilina, abuser de* tience? You always come to see me by night; why do you not *— de* come in the day-time? It is not amidst the pleasures of this *de — — parmi* world that we find happiness; it is in the bosom of inno- *art. sein art.*



cence and peace, where we ought to look for it. There is no  
 going any where in winter. He speaks so low that I can hardly  
 hear what he says. The Spaniards pursued them so closely  
 that they entered the town helter-skelter. Let the worst come  
 to the worst, I will get rid of it. All our rooms are on the same  
 floor. You give me more than enough. You come very sea-  
 sonably, and your brother came in the nick of time. She is better  
 than her sister, in all respects. Our eating-room is even with  
 the ground.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### OF THE PREPOSITION.

232. Prepositions may be divided, according to their regimen, into three classes :

233. 1. Those which govern the nouns without the assistance of any other preposition : as *à, de, dès, &c.*

234. 2. Those which govern the nouns with the assistance of the preposition *à* : which are, *conformément, jusqu'* or *jusques, par rapport, quant, attendant, &c*  
 And,

235. 3. Those which govern them with the assistance of the preposition *de* : as, *auprès, autour, &c.*

236. *A, de, en*, must be repeated before every substantive.

237. The other prepositions, particularly those which have only one syllable, are to be repeated before substantives which have different or opposite meanings : as, *dans la paix, et dans la guerre ; par la force, et par l'adresse.*

238. But they are not to be repeated when the nouns are synonymous : as, *dans la paix et la tranquillité; par la force et la violence.*

## EXERCISE LXIII.

ON PREPOSITIONS OF THE FIRST CLASS. *See art. 233.*

We find less <sup>2</sup>real <sup>1</sup>happiness in an <sup>2</sup>elevated <sup>1</sup>condition than in  
 On <sup>de</sup>  
 a <sup>2</sup>middling <sup>1</sup>state. One is never truly peaceful but at home.  
 moyen véritablement tranquille soi.  
 He walked before me to serve me as a guide. There was a  
 pour de —  
<sup>2</sup>delightful <sup>1</sup>grove behind his house. Nature displays her riches  
 bosquet, m. déployer  
 with magnificence under the <sup>2</sup>torrid <sup>1</sup>zone. <sup>5</sup>Eternal <sup>4</sup>snows  
 sdes ion  
 are to be seen on the summit of the Alps. Towards the north, nature  
 .... <sup>2</sup>voir..... sommet  
 assumes a <sup>2</sup>gloomy <sup>3</sup>and <sup>4</sup>wild <sup>1</sup>aspect. We were up before day light,  
 triste se lever —  
 in order to enjoy the <sup>2</sup>magnificent <sup>1</sup>spectacle of the <sup>2</sup>rising <sup>1</sup>sun.  
 ...pour... de  
 From my earliest infancy I have had an abhorrence of lying.  
 — art. tendre — horreur mensonge.  
 With wit, politeness, and some readiness to oblige, one gene-  
 un peu de .....prévenance.....  
 rally succeeds in the world. Besides the <sup>2</sup>exterior <sup>1</sup>advantages of  
 art  
 figure, and the graces of deportment, she possesses an <sup>2</sup>excellent  
 art. maintien, avoir  
 heart, a <sup>2</sup>correct <sup>1</sup>judgment, and a <sup>2</sup>sensible <sup>1</sup>mind. Always act  
 sain se conduire  
 according to the maxims which I have given you. We  
 — inculquer  
 cannot long act contrary to our own character; notwith-  
 savoir cond. pr. agir ...contre... —  
 standing all the pains we take to disguise it, it shows itself, and  
 que pour se montrer.  
 betrays us on many occasions. I have written to you con-  
 en bien de art.  
 cerning that business, in which I take the most lively interest; and  
 à lequel vif  
 as I know well your benevolence towards the unfortunate,  
 connaître malheureux,

I have not the least doubt that you will carefully attend  
 ...ne douter nullement... ne donner tous vos soins, *subj. pr.*  
 to it, not so much for the satisfaction of obliging me, as for the pleasure  
 ..y...moins....  
 of justifying innocence and confounding calumny. When we  
*art.* *art.*  
 were in the country, we devoted the morning to study, we  
*à* consacrer *matinée* *art.*  
 walked at noon, and at three or four o'clock we went a hunting, or a  
*midi,*  
 fishing. That man with his <sup>2</sup>gloomy <sup>1</sup>looks and <sup>2</sup>surly  
*pêche, f.* *à* — *art.* *sombre* *regard, m.* *brusque*  
<sup>1</sup>behaviour, seems fit only to serve as a scarecrow. In that happy  
*maintien, ne* *de* — *épouvantail.*  
 retreat we lived on the milk of our flocks, and the <sup>2</sup>delicious <sup>1</sup>fruits of  
*de* *brebis,*  
 our orchards. We were at peace, and <sup>2</sup>enjoyed <sup>3</sup>all <sup>1</sup>its blessings,  
*en* *goûter* *en* <sup>4</sup>*art.* *charme,*  
 when ambition rekindled the flames of war, and forced us  
*art.* *rallumer* *feu* *art.*  
 to put our frontiers in a state of defence.  
*de* —

## EXERCISE LXIV.

ON PREPOSITIONS OF THE SECOND CLASS. *See art. 234.*

A magistrate should always judge agreeably to the laws, and  
 according to what they prescribe. He has been punished  
*conformément*  
 pursuant to an act of parliament. His garden is next to  
*conformément* *attenant*  
 mine. Yesterday we waited for him till five o'clock in the morning.  
*attendre* *de*  
 If I had not stopped him, he would have gone even to Dover. We  
*jusque*  
 accompanied them as far as Antwerp. I will do it for your  
*jusque* *Anvers.* *à*  
 sake but never on account of them. As for me, I will not  
*considération* *par rapport* *Quant*  
 give him a penny. As to what people may say, I do not care for it.  
*sous.* *l' on* *s' en soucier*

## EXERCISE LXV.

ON PREPOSITIONS OF THE THIRD CLASS. *See art. 235.*

I have sent nothing to your brother, because of his idleness; but I

forgive him on your account. Cut that sorrel even with the  
 ground. All laid down their arms, except two regiments,  
 who preferred making their way through the enemy. He is  
 become a very good master by dint of study and practice. Under  
 that thick tree we shall be sheltered from the rain. All the prisoners  
 made their escape by means of the darkness of the night. I am  
 going to meet my aunt; will you accompany me? He took  
 my hat instead of his. My house is good for nothing in comparison  
 of hers. I can do nothing for want of money. They were  
 off the Cape of Good Hope, when they were taken. He is  
 gone along the river. The officers and soldiers were lodged in  
 barracks, proof to cannon and bomb.

## CHAPTER IX.

## OF THE CONJUNCTION.

239. Conjunctions may be divided into three classes :

240. 1. Those which either govern the indicative, or may be used with any mood : as, *et, ou, sinon, &c.*

241. 2. Those which require the following verb to be in the infinitive mood : as, *afin de, de peur de, &c.* And,

242. 3. Those which require the following verb to be in the subjunctive : as, *afin que, quoique, &c.*

## EXERCISE LXVI.

ON CONJUNCTIONS OF THE FIRST CLASS. See art. 240.

Gold and silver are metals less useful than iron. I like  
 neither flatterers nor the wicked. You may choose either a happy

mediocrity, or a sphere more elevated, but exposed to many dangers.

*f.*

He is an <sup>2</sup>inconsistent <sup>1</sup>man; he is sometimes of one opinion, and  
Ce inconséquent tantôt avis,

sometimes of another. I have nothing more to say to you, only  
ne autre chose sinon

that I will have it so. The serpent bites; it is only a  
vouloir — — — — — ce ne

bite; but from this bite the venom communicates itself to the  
morsure; *f.* venin

whole body: the slanderer speaks; it is but a word; but this  
ce ne parole;

word resounds every where. The most beautiful flowers last  
retentir ne durer

but a moment: thus <sup>3</sup>human <sup>2</sup>life <sup>1</sup>passes away. The greater part  
plupart, *f.*

of mankind have, like plants, <sup>3</sup>hidden <sup>2</sup>qualities, that  
*art.* hommes *art.* des propriété, *f.*

chance discovers. We ought to love what is amiable: now  
*art.* hasard faire découvrir. or

virtue is amiable; therefore we ought to love virtue. Despréaux,  
*art.*

was extremely particular in not coming too late, when he was  
de la plus grande exactitude à

invited to dinner; he said that all the faults of those who  
défaut

are waited for present themselves to those who wait for them. We  
se faire attendre —

had hardly done when he came in.  
finir entrer.

## EXERCISE LXVII.

ON CONJUNCTIONS OF THE SECOND CLASS. See *art.* 241.

In order to <sup>2</sup>learn <sup>1</sup>well, we must study with a great deal of attention  
— falloir

Let us breakfast before we <sup>2</sup>begin any thing. A prudent man ought  
— ...<sup>1</sup>rien...

to think several times, before he acts. I would not do it for fear of  
— agir.

displeasing you. He is capable of every thing except of doing  
....tout....

good. He lost his arm for want of sending for a surgeon. Your  
chirurgien.

cousin has humbled himself till he fell on his knees before the idol  
...s' humilier.... .. à ..

Far from exciting them to fight, I did all that I could, in order to pre

vent them. She would do any thing in the world, rather than  
 ...tout... à  
 speak to him. Rather than study, he loses his time, or spends it in  
 passer  
 trifles. We must, at least, know the <sup>2</sup>general <sup>1</sup>principles of a lan-  
 guage, before we take upon ourselves to teach it.  
 .....de se mêler..... de

## EXERCISE LXVIII.

ON CONJUNCTIONS OF THE THIRD CLASS. *See art. 242.*

To listen with joy to a slanderer, and to applaud him, is to cherish  
 — médisant, — lui, ce réchauffer  
 the serpent who stings, that he may sting more effectually.  
 afin sûrement.  
 Although Homer, according to Horace, slumbers at times, he  
 sommeiller quelquefois, n'en  
 is, nevertheless, the first of all poets. You will succeed, provided  
 pas moins, réussir,  
 you act with vigour. I will explain to you every difficulty,  
 que afin  
 that you may not be disheartened in your undertaking. You will  
 décourager  
 never be respected, unless you forsake the bad company you  
 abandonner que  
 keep. They are not happy, though they be rich. Although you  
 fréquenter.  
 have a good memory, this is not enough to learn any language  
 pour une  
 whatever : you must make use of your judgment. I will not give you  
 se servir  
 that penknife, lest you should make a bad use of it. God grant  
 ,veuille que  
 you be not disappointed in your hopes ! Would to God I had  
 tromper Plût que  
 been there ! I would have conquered or perished. God forbid  
 vaincre à ne plaise  
 I should blame your conduct. However little you give her,  
 que Pour peu que  
 she is of <sup>3</sup>so <sup>4</sup>good <sup>1</sup>a <sup>2</sup>temper, that she is always pleased. If your  
 naturel,  
 father do not arrive to-day, and if you want money, I  
 que avoir besoin de  
 will lend you some.

## CHAPTER X.

## OF THE INTERJECTION.

243. There are interjections of different sorts, according to the different passions which they serve to express : viz.

Allons! <i>Come!</i>	Holà ho! <i>Ho there!</i>
Ah mon Dieu! <i>Oh my God!</i>	Hem! <i>Hem!</i>
Ha, quelle joie! <i>Oh joy!</i>	Fi! <i>Fie!</i>
O ciel! <i>Oh heaven!</i>	Fi donc! <i>For shame!</i>
Hélas! <i>Alas!</i>	Paix! chut! st! <i>Hist! hush!</i>
Miséricorde! <i>Bless me!</i>	Silence! <i>Silence!</i>
Malheur à vous! <i>Wo to you!</i>	

## EXERCISE LXIX.

Come! friends, let us rejoice. Fie! fie! Robert, you do not reflect  
*..se réjouir..*

on what you say. Oh! <sup>1</sup>how <sup>6</sup>lovely <sup>4</sup>a <sup>5</sup>virtue <sup>3</sup>is <sup>2</sup>modesty. Alas  
*que*

who can express the torments I suffer here. Wo to you! usurers,  
 misers. Bless me! I am undone. Hush there! silence. Oh! the  
*perdre* *là*

dismal effects of idleness!



## PART II.

---

SYNTAX is that part of Grammar which treats of the Agreement and Construction of Words in a Sentence.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### OF THE SUBSTANTIVE.

244. Substantives generally have but one gender : there are some, however, which are masculine or feminine, according to their signification ; and a few which are masculine in one number, and feminine in the other. For a list of these, see ante, page 45.

245. *Gens* requires all adjectives which precede it to be feminine, and all which follow it to be masculine : as, *les vieilles gens sont soupçonneux ; toutes les méchantes gens.*

However, instead of *toutes*, *tous* is employed : 1st When this adjective is the only one which precedes *gens* : as, *tous les gens d'esprit.* 2d. When *gens* is preceded by an adjective which has but one termination for both genders : as, *tous les honnêtes gens ; tous les habiles gens.* (French Acad.)

246. Certain nouns remain in the singular number, although there is plurality in the idea. These are :

247. 1. Proper noun : as, *l'Espagne a vu naître les deux Sénèque.*

Except when they are employed as nouns common, to designate individuals like those whose names we employ .

as, *la France a eu ses Césars et ses Pompées*; that is, generals equal to Cæsar and Pompey.

248. 2. Nouns borrowed from foreign languages, and which are not yet made French: as, *des alléluia, des avé, des auto-da-fé, des alinéa, &c.*

249. However, the French Academy writes, *des factums, des débets, des bravos, des opéras.*

250. 3. Words used as nouns (parts of speech, &c.), which, naturally, are not declinable: as, *les pourquoi, les car, les oui, les non, les on dit, &c.*

251. In nouns compounded of two or more words, the only words that take the sign of the plural, are the substantive and adjective: as, *un plain-chant, des plains-chants; une plate-forme, des plates-formes, &c.*

252. There are some compound words, however, which, of necessity, from their sense, do not change in the plural, even where one of the words is a substantive: such as, *un crève-cœur, des crève-cœur*, literally, *burst-heart*, that is, great troubles that burst the heart; *un coupe-gorge, des coupe-gorge*, literally, *cut-throat*, that is, places where a man is exposed to have his throat cut.

253. When a noun is compounded of two substantives united by a preposition, the first alone takes the sign of the plural: as, *un arc-en-ciel*, a rainbow; *des arcs-en-ciel*, rainbows.

254. This last rule has the following exceptions: *des coq-à-l'âne*, cock and bull stories; *des pied-à-terre*, country lodgings; *des tête-à-tête*, private conversations.

255. Compound nouns, the second word of which always marks plurality in the idea, take *s*, both in the singular and in the plural: as, *un cure-dents*, a tooth-pick; *des casse-noixettes*, nut-crackers.

## CHAPTER II.

## OF THE ARTICLE.

256. The article is to be put before all substantives common, taken in a general sense : as,

L' homme se repait trop souvent de chimères.

*Man too often beguiles himself with chimeras.*

Les hommes à imagination sont toujours malheureux.

*Men of imaginative dispositions are always unhappy.*

257. In English, the article is not used before substantives taken in a general sense.

258. The article is also to be used before substantives taken in a determinate sense, as in English : as,

L' homme dont vous parlez.

*The man of whom you speak.*

L' enfant qui pleure.

*The child who cries.*

259. The article is put before proper names of countries, regions, rivers, winds, and mountains : as,

*La France est bornée au sud par les Pyrénées et la Méditerranée, à l' est par la Suisse et la Savoie, au nord par les Pays-Bas, et à l' ouest par l' océan.*

*France is bounded on the south by the Pyrenees and the Mediterranean, on the east by Switzerland and Savoy, on the north by the Netherlands, and on the west by the ocean.*

*La Tamise, le Rhône, l' aquilon, les Alpes, le Cantal.*

*The Thames, the Rhone, the north wind, the Alps, the Cantal.*

Except Naples : as,

Naples est un pays délicieux.

*Naples is a delightful country.*

260. The article is put before the adverbs *plus, mieux, moins*, to express comparison, and agrees in gender with the substantive : as,

Cette dame ne pleurait pas, quoiqu'elle fût la plus affligée.

*That lady did not cry, although she was the most afflicted.*

261. The article remains always in the masculine, when we express a quality in the highest degree without comparison : as,

Cette dame ne pleure pas, lors même qu' elle est le plus affligée.

*That lady does not cry, even when she is most [extremely] afflicted.*

## EXERCISE LXX.

The moment elegance, the most visible image of fine  
 De que 250\* 279 un délicat  
 taste, appears, it is universally admired: men differ respecting the  
 se montre, 256 sur  
 other constituent parts of beauty, but they all unite without  
 qui composer — 256 se  
 hesitation in acknowledging the power of elegance. Tranquillity  
 a 256 256  
 of soul is the height of felicity. The man who lives under an  
 comble dans  
 habitual sense of the divine presence, preserves a perpetual  
 conviction conserver constant  
 cheerfulness of temper, and enjoys, every moment, the satisfaction of  
 thinking himself in company with the dearest and best of friends.  
 Europe is bounded on the north by the Frozen Ocean; on the south  
 259  
 by the Mediterranean Sea, which separates it from Africa; on the  
 259  
 east by the continent of Asia; on the west by the Atlantic Ocean.  
 Of all the planets, the moon is the most brilliant to us. The moon  
 260  
 does not give us so much light as the sun, even when it shines  
 brightest. This woman has the art of shedding tears, even when  
 261  
 she is least afflicted.  
 261

262. The article is put before substantives taken in a partitive sense; see art. 52, 53, 154 ante: as,

Du pain.	Some bread.
De l' eau.	Some water.
Des tableaux.	Some pictures.

263. The article is omitted, however, when the substantive, taken in a partitive sense, is preceded by an adjective; see art. 155 ante: as,

Je mange de bon pain.	I eat good bread.
Je bois de bonne eau.	I drink good water.
J' ai de beaux tableaux.	I have beautiful pictures.

---

\* That is: See art. 256, page 167 ante, for the rule which is applicable here, &c. &c.

264. When the adjective is joined to the substantive so as to form but one word, the article must be used : as,

Des petits-maitres.	<i>Fops.</i>
Des petits-pois.	<i>Peas.</i>

265. It may not be improper to observe here, that most authors who have made literal translations from French into English, have erroneously rendered the words *du, de la, des*, by *some* ; not thinking that nearly all sentences of which these words form a part are elliptical.

For instance, when, sitting at table, I say, *Donnez-moi du pain*, Give me some bread, I mean, *Donnez-moi une portion, ou un morceau du pain qui est sur la table*, Give me a portion, or a piece of the bread which is on the table. So that it is easy to see, that in *Donnez-moi du pain*, the word *portion*, or *morceau*, which is the equivalent of *some*, is understood in French ; whereas, *du*, of the, is understood in English. The correct translation would then be,\*

Donnez-moi	du pain.
Give me some	— bread.

266. The French, unlike the English, do not put the article before substantives employed adjectively, that is, to qualify a preceding noun : as,

Télémaque, fils d' Ulysse.	<i>Telemachus, the son of Ulysses.</i>
Le Duc d' York, prince du sang.	<i>The Duke of York, a prince of the blood.</i>
Je suis Français.	<i>I am a Frenchman.</i>

267. But if the substantive be used in a restricted sense, *un* or *une* must precede it, as in English : as,

Je suis <i>un</i> Français d' une illustre maison.	<i>I am a Frenchman of an illustrious family.</i>
--	---

268. The article is omitted before *plus* and *moins*, when either of them is repeated to express a comparison : as,

Plus une chose est difficile, plus elle est honorable.	<i>The more difficult a thing is, the more honourable it is.</i>
---	--

---

\* See Collot's "PROGRESSIVE INTERLINEAR FRENCH READER," in which this error has been carefully avoided.



273. But the agreement takes place if the adjective be placed immediately before the substantive : as,

*La feue reine. The late queen.*

274. Adjectives used substantively are, like substantives common, accompanied by the article : as,

*Les fous inventent les modes, et Les sages s' y conforment. Fools invent fashions, and wise men conform to them.*

275. The adjective takes the article wherever there is a noun expressed or understood : as,

*La langue française, et l' anglaise sont très-cultivées. The French and English languages are very much cultivated.*

The noun *langue* is here understood before *anglaise*.

276. When two or three adjectives qualify a single noun, the article is not repeated : as,

*Le sensible et vertueux Fénelon. The sensible and virtuous Fénelon.*

277. When the adjective is placed after a proper name, which it qualifies, it expresses a distinguishing quality : as, *Varron le savant* ; meaning the one distinguished for his learning from all of the same name.

278. When a superlative relative precedes a substantive, the article serves for both substantive and adjective : as,

*Les plus habiles gens font quelquefois les plus grandes fautes. The ablest men sometimes commit the greatest blunders.*

279. But if the superlative relative follow the substantive, the article must be repeated : as,

*Les gens les plus habiles font quelquefois les fautes les plus grandes. The ablest man sometimes commit the greatest blunders.*

280. Adjectives in French, are generally placed after the substantive.

281. This rule is, however, subject to many exceptions, which it would not be possible to present in a systematic view to the student : practice and taste will, in this instance, be his best teachers.



282. The adjective, placed after two or several substantives which are not united by the conjunction *et*, agrees in gender and number with the last only: as,

Il a montré une réserve, une retenue, *digne d'éloges.*      *He exhibited a reserve, a discretion, worthy to be praised.*

### EXERCISE LXXII.

He ran through the streets like a madman, barefoot and bareheaded. 270

His legs were bare. Give me half a guinea, and then you will  
— Il 236 avoir 271 270

only owe me a guinea and a half. I shall be at home in half an  
— 271 chez moi 270

hour. The late queen was idolized. The late queen was universally  
272 273

regretted. The ignorant have, in a large stock of presumption, what  
fort dose

they want in real knowledge, and that is the reason they are ad-  
ce qui fait que

mired by fools. We ought to frequent good, and shun bad company.  
274 275 256

The ancient and modern writers are not agreed upon that point.  
275

The wise man preserves the same tranquillity of mind in good or bad  
275 237

fortune. The more we read the fables of the good and artless La  
268 on 276

Fontaine, the more we are convinced they are a book for all ages, and  
268 258

the manual of the man of taste.

### EXERCISE LXXIII.

It was only under the reign of Louis the Just (the Thirteenth,) that  
277

good taste began to show itself in France; but it was under that of  
258

Louis the Great that it was carried to perfection. It has been said of  
On —

the Telemachus of the virtuous Fenelon, that it is the most useful present  
279 don

the muses have made to mankind; for, could the happiness of  
que 407 si

man be produced by a poem, it would be by that. The smoothest  
...naître... de tranquille

waters often conceal the most dangerous gulfs. The most beautiful  
 279 279 278  
 actions are sometimes sullied by the greatest vices. Cicero was the  
 278 est 278  
 most eminent orator the Romans have had. All his life was but a  
 célèbre 407 a été  
 labour, but a continual occupation.  
 282

## OF THE DETERMINATIVE ADJECTIVE.

283. *Vingt* and *cent* take *s*, when multiplied by other numeral adjectives : as,

Quatre-vingts hommes. Eighty men.  
 Deux cents bœufs. Two hundred oxen.

284. But they do not take *s*, when followed by other numeral adjectives ; as,

Quatre vingt-un hommes. Eighty-one men.  
 Deux cent six bœufs. Two hundred and six oxen.

285. The adverbs of place, *ci* and *là*, are often joined to the adjectives *ce*, *cet*, *cette*, *ces*, in order to point out in a more precise manner the person or thing spoken of. The adjective is then placed before the substantive, and the adverb after it : as,

Ce livre-ci, this book. Cet homme-là, that man.  
 Cette fleur-ci, this flower. Ces femmes-là, those women.

286. The adjective possessive, which, in English, precedes a noun representing any part of the body, is rendered in French by placing the definite article before the noun, and a pronoun of the proper person before the verb : as,

Il me coupa le bras. He cut my arm.  
 On lui a coupé la jambe. They have cut off his leg.

287. *Chaque*, which is of both genders, has no plural, and must always be followed by a substantive : as,

*Chaque* pays a ses coutumes. Each country has its customs.

288. *Nul* and *pas un* have no plural : they require *ne* before the verb : as,

*Nul* homme n'est parfait. No man is perfect.  
*Pas une* expérience ne réussit. Not one experiment succeeds.

289. *Aucun* is not employed in the plural, except before substantives which, in some particular sense, are better employed in the plural : as,

Il n' a fait *aucunes* dispositions.      *He has made no dispositions.*

290. *Tout*, considered collectively, signifies the whole of a thing, and is then followed by the article : as,

*Tout* l' univers.      *The whole universe.*

291. *Tout*, when considered distributively, signifies *chaque*, every, and is not accompanied by the article : as,

*Tout* bien est désirable.      *Every good is desirable.*

292. *Quelque*, when it precedes a substantive, is of both genders, and takes *s* in the plural : as,

Il a fait *quelques* fautes.      *He has committed some faults.*

*Quelques* efforts que vous fassiez.      *Whatever attempts you may make.*

293. *Quelque*, before an adjective, operates as an adverb, and is indeclinable, except when the adjective precedes a substantive in the plural : as,

*Quelque* belle qu' elle puisse être, elle ne doit pas être vaine.      *However beautiful she may be, she ought not to be vain.*

*Quelques* braves soldats y sont allés.      *Some brave soldiers went thither.*

294. *Quel que*, before a verb, must be two words ; and *quel* agrees in gender and number with the substantive : as,

*Quelles que* soient vos affaires, venez.      *Whatever your business may be, come.*

295. *Quelconque* is always placed after the substantive ; and when used with a negative, is always singular : as,

Il n' y a raison *quelconque* qui puisse l' y obliger.      *There is no reason whatever which can oblige him to it.*

#### EXERCISE LXXIV.

I bought eighty horses, two hundred oxen, ninety sheep, and two

283

283

284

hundred and four cows. I had a fall yesterday and hurt my back

284

286

and head. In this bloody battle he received a wound, by a shot, in  
 286 ....coup de feu....  
 his right arm, and another in his left leg: by dint of care his arm  
 286 286  
 was saved; but it was necessary to amputate his leg. This stuff  
 286 285  
 will become you wonderfully. That action is worthy of blame.  
 ....siéra.... à merveille. 285  
 This scene is calculated to interest all men, but that cannot succeed,  
 faite 258 ne saurait  
 Every nation has, in its turn, shone on the theatre of the world.  
 287 à

## EXERCISE LXXV.

No expression, no truth of design or colouring, no touches of genius  
 288 dessin trait  
 in that great work. Did any man ever attain to such a pitch of  
 289 parvenir .. ce.. comble  
 glory! I doubt whether there be in any science a more <sup>2</sup>evident  
 que 289 lumineux  
<sup>1</sup>principle. The whole course of his life has been distinguished by  
 290 marquer  
<sup>2</sup>generous <sup>1</sup>actions. Every vice is odious. Whatever faults you  
 291 292  
 may have committed, they will forgive you. All men, however  
 fait, 258 293  
 opposite they may be, agree on that point. Whatever your  
 294  
 fault may be, I will forgive you. There is no reason whatever  
 295  
 that can bring him to it.  
 puisse déterminer 118

## CHAPTER IV.

### OF THE PRONOUN

## SECTION I.

## OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

296 *Je, tu, il, elle, ils, elles*, are always the subject; that is, they always represent the person or thing which performs the action expressed by the verb: as,

*Je dis la vérité.*

*I speak the truth.*

*Tu apprendras des nouvelles.*

*Thou wilt hear news.*

*Il nous raconta son histoire.*  
*Elles sont survenues à l'im-*  
*proviste.*

*He told us his history.*  
*They have come unexpectedly.*

297. *Me, te, se, leur, le, la, les, y, en*, are always the object; that is, they always represent the person or thing which suffers the action expressed by the verb: as,

<i>Je me rase.</i>	<i>I shave myself.</i>
<i>Tu leur parles.</i>	<i>Thou speakest to them.</i>
<i>Il te voit.</i>	<i>He sees thee.</i>
<i>Ils la voient.</i>	<i>They see her.</i>

298. In affirmative sentences, the subject always comes first: as,

<i>Je me rase.</i>	<i>I shave myself.</i>
--------------------	------------------------

299. In negative sentences, the particle *ne* is put between the subject and object: as,

<i>Je ne me rase pas.</i>	<i>I shave not myself.</i>
---------------------------	----------------------------

300. In interrogative sentences, the subject is put after the verb: as,

<i>Me rasé-je ?</i>	<i>Shave I myself ?</i>
---------------------	-------------------------

301. In negative-and-interrogative sentences, the subject is also put after the verb: as,

<i>Ne me rasé-je pas ?</i>	<i>Shave I not myself ?</i>
----------------------------	-----------------------------

302. The regimen of *me, te, se*, is sometimes *direct*, and sometimes *indirect*:

303. It is *direct*, when they represent respectively *moi, toi, soi*: as,

<i>Vous me connaissez.</i>	<i>You know me.</i>
<i>Je te vois.</i>	<i>I see thee.</i>
<i>Il se perd.</i>	<i>He ruins himself.</i>

304. And *indirect*, when they supply respectively the place of *a moi, à toi, à soi*: as,

<i>Vous me parlez.</i>	<i>You speak to me.</i>
<i>Je t' écris.</i>	<i>I write to thee.</i>
<i>Il se représente.</i>	<i>He represents to himself.</i>

305. *Le, la, les*, are always *direct*: as,

Je <i>le</i> vois,	for	Je vois <i>lui</i> .
Je <i>la</i> vois,	..	Je vois <i>elle</i> .
Je <i>les</i> vois,	..	Je vois <i>eux</i> , or <i>elles</i> .

306. *Leur, y, en*, are always indirect: as,

Je <i>leur</i> parle,	for	Je parle à <i>eux</i> , or à <i>elles</i> .
Je n' <i>y</i> entends rien,	..	Je n' entends rien à <i>cela</i> .
J' <i>en</i> suis fâché,	..	Je suis fâché <i>de cela</i> .

307. The pronouns which are sometimes the subject, and sometimes the regimen or object, are *nous, vous, moi, toi, lui, elle, eux, elles*: as,

<i>Nous</i> leur parlons.	<i>We</i> speak to them.
Ils <i>nous</i> parlent.	<i>They</i> speak to us.

308. *Moi, toi*, after the imperative, are changed into *me, te*, when followed by *en*: as,

Donnez- <i>m'</i> <i>en</i> .	<i>Give me some.</i>
Retourne- <i>t'</i> <i>en</i> .	<i>Go back.</i>

309. When several pronouns accompany a verb, *me, te, se, nous, vous* must be placed first in order; *le, la, les*, before *lui, leur*; and *y* before *en*, which is always the last: as,

Prêtez-moi ce livre; je *vous* *le* rendrai demain; si *vous* *me* *le* refusez, je saurai *m' en* passer.

*Lend me that book; I will return it to you to-morrow; if you refuse me, I can make shift without it.*

Aurez-vous la force de *le* *leur* dire?

*Will you have the resolution to mention it to them?*

Il n' a pas voulu *vous y* mener.

*He was not willing to take you there.*

Je *vous y en* porterai.

*I will bring you some there.*

310. In imperative sentences, when *me* is changed into *moi*, it is preceded by *le, la, les*: as,

Donnez- <i>le-moi</i> .	<i>Give it to me.</i>
Apportez- <i>les-moi</i> .	<i>Bring them to me.</i>

311. In imperative sentences, *moi*, for the sake of euphony, is placed after *y*; as,

Menez-*y-moi*. *Carry me thither.*

312. The pronoun *le* may supply the place of a member of a sentence: as,

On doit s'accommoder à l'humeur des autres, autant qu'on le peut.

*We ought to accommodate ourselves to the temper of others, as much as we can.*

313. *Le*, also, supplies the place of an adjective, or of a substantive used adjectively : as,

Madame, êtes-vous *malade* ?—  
Oui, je *le* suis.

*Madame, are you sick ?—Yes, I am.*

Mesdames, êtes-vous *mariées* ?  
Oui, nous *le* sommes.

*Ladies, are you married ?—Yes, we are.*

314. But *la*, *les*, supply the place of substantives, or of adjectives used substantively : as,

Mesdames, êtes-vous *les mariées* ?—Oui, nous *les* sommes.

*Ladies, are you the brides ?—Yes, we are.*

Madame, êtes-vous *la malade* ?—Oui, je *la* suis.

*Madam, are you the sick person ?—Yes, I am.*

315. Pronouns expressing the first and second persons, must be repeated before all the verbs : as,

Je soutiens, et *je* soutiendrai toujours.

*I maintain, and [I] will always maintain.*

Vous dites, et *vous* avez toujours dit.

*You say, and [you] have always said.*

316. Pronouns of the third person, when they form the subject, are seldom repeated before verbs of the same tenses : as,

La bonne grâce ne gâte rien ; elle ajoute à la beauté, et relève la modestie.

*A graceful manner spoils nothing ; it adds to beauty, and heightens modesty.*

317. But these pronouns are generally repeated before verbs of different tenses ; and when passing from an affirmation to a negation, and the contrary : as,

Il est arrivé ce matin, et *il* repartira ce soir.

*He arrived this morning, and [he] will set off again this evening.*

Il veut, et *il* ne veut pas.

*He will, and [he] will not.*

318. Pronouns forming the regimen, are repeated before every verb : as,

L' idée de ses malheurs le poursuit, *le* tourmente et *l'* accable.

*The idea of his misfortunes pursues [him], torments [him] and overwhelms him.*



Il nous ennuie et nous obsède      *He wearies [us] and besets us*  
 sans cesse.      *unceasingly.*

319. Except before such compound verbs as express the repetition of the same action, and are in the same tense; as, *je vous le dis, et redis; il le fait, et refait, sans cesse.*

## EXERCISE LXXVI.

The better to bear the irksomeness of captivity and solitude, I  
 Pour 256  
 sought for books; for I was overwhelmed with melancholy, for want  
 de ..faute..  
 of some knowledge to cherish and support my mind. I,  
 qui pût nourrir 307  
 who am older than he, I! go and speak to him! No; I  
 307 — 115 296  
 will not go; let him come himself. How darest thou answer thy  
 296  
 master in <sup>3</sup>so <sup>4</sup>insolent <sup>1</sup>a <sup>2</sup>manner? Thou whom he loves, thou  
 de 307 296  
 for whom he takes so much pains. He has been speaking to  
 131  
 them with an energy that has astonished them. He said to me,  
 297 302  
 Wilt thou torment thyself incessantly for advantages, the en-  
 se tourmenter 303 52 biens,  
 joyment of which could not render thee more happy? Cast thy  
 297 286  
 eyes round thee: see how every thing smiles at thee, and seems  
 304 — 297  
 to invite thee to prefer a retired and tranquil life, to the tumultuous  
 pleasures of a vain world.

## EXERCISE LXXVII.

I believe your brothers are not well; for I have not seen  
 que 299  
 them this week. Does he recognise himself in this portrait?  
 305 300 à  
 Do you hide yourselves in order to surprise them? Do you not  
 301  
 see them every day? Enjoy the pleasures of the world; I  
 de  
 consent to it: but never give yourself up to them. I shall never  
 306 306  
 consent to that foolish scheme; do not mention it any more  
 parler 306

If you have good pears, send me some. You wish to make  
 263 308  
 a present to your sister. There is a beautiful fan; you should  
 ..Voila.. devoir  
 present it to her. I shall speak to them about it, and  
 offrir 309 ..lui.. 309 ...en... 315  
 give you a faithful account of it. I know you have con-  
 rendre exact que  
 cealed my book: return it to me. Do you go to your country  
 — 310  
 seat? Yes, I do. Conduct me thither. Take us thither.  
 311 309

## EXERCISE LXXVIII.

The laws of nature and decency equally oblige us to defend  
 256 236 bienséance  
 the honour and interest of our parents, when we can do it without  
 256 312  
 injustice. We were embarrassed, and are so yet. Are you Mrs.  
 313  
 2such a 'one? Yes, I am. Are those your servants?  
 — 314 Sont-ce là  
 Yes, they are. Overwhelmed with sorrow, I exclaimed and  
 314  
 said. He took the strongest cities, conquered the most con-  
 315  
 siderable provinces, and overturned the most powerful kingdoms.  
 It is inconceivable how whimsical she is: from one moment to  
 another she will and she will not. It is taste that selects the  
 expressions, that combines, arranges, and varies them,  
 318  
 so as to produce the greatest effect.  
 de manière à ce qu'elles

## SECTION II.

## OF THE POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

320. These pronouns must always relate to a substan-  
 tive previously expressed: as,

Votre livre est mieux relié que *Your book is better bound than*  
*le mien.* *mine.*

## SECTION III.

## OF THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

321. *Qui*, when it is the subject, relates both to persons and things : as,

La femme *qui* chante.      *The woman who sings.*  
 Les livres *qui* instruisent.      *The books which instruct.*

322. But when *qui* is the regimen, it can only be used of persons, or of things personified : as,

La femme de *qui* vous parlez.      *The woman of whom you are speaking.*  
 Rocher ! à *qui* je me plains.      *Rock ! to whom I complain.*

323. *Que* relates both to persons and things. It is always the regimen, and cannot occur without an antecedent expressed : as,

C' est vous *qu'* on appelle.      *It is you whom they call.*  
 C' est le livre *que* je cherche.      *It is the book which I am seeking for.*

324. *Lequel* relates both to persons and things. It is generally used after a preposition : as,

La protection sur *laquelle* il comptait.      *The protection on which he relied.*  
 L' étude à *laquelle* ils' applique.      *The study to which he applies himself.*

325. *Dont*, also, relates both to persons and things ; but it must be preferred to *duquel*, when a noun comes after it : as,

Le prince *dont* la protection.      *The prince whose protection.*

326. *Quoi* relates only to things. It is always preceded by a preposition, and is generally used when the subject is vague and indefinite : as,

Il n' y a rien à *quoi* je sois plus disposé.      *There is nothing to which I am more inclined.*  
*De quoi parler ai-je ?*

## EXERCISE LXXIX.

A young man who loves vanity of dress, is unworthy of wisdom  
 321 à se parer vainement, 256

and glory; glory is due only to a heart that knows how to suffer pain,  
 236 321 —  
 and to trample upon pleasure. That after which a true philosopher  
 Ce 326  
 sighs most ardently, is to spread that sentiment of <sup>2</sup>universal <sup>1</sup>benevo-  
 261  
 lence, which should unite and bring together all men. These are  
 321 .. rapprocher.. 256  
 conditions without which the thing would not have been concluded.  
 262 324  
 A man whose manners are innocent, and behaviour blameless, is  
 325 258 irrécusable,  
 the man whom we ought to cherish and honour. The ambitious man  
 323 —  
 sees nothing but pleasure in the possession of the offices to which he  
 — 324  
 aspires with so much eagerness, instead of seeing the trouble that is  
 321  
 inseparable from them. To whom were you speaking when I met  
 118 322  
 you? It was to my brother-in-law.

## SECTION IV.

### OF THE ABSOLUTE PRONOUNS.

327. *Qui* relates to persons only, and is of both genders and numbers: as,

<i>Qui</i> vous a dit cela?	<i>Who</i> told you that?
<i>Qui</i> sont ces femmes là?	<i>Who</i> are those women?

328. *Que* and *quoi* relate to things only: as,

<i>Que</i> pouvait la valeur?	<i>What</i> could valour do?
<i>A quoi</i> pensez-vous?	<i>What</i> are you thinking of?

329. *Que* is sometimes used for *à quoi*, *de quoi*: as,

<i>Que</i> sert la science sans la vertu?	<i>What</i> avails learning, without virtue?
<i>Que</i> sert à l' avare d' avoir des richesses?	<i>What</i> avails it the miser to possess treasures?

330. *Que* and *quoi* require the preposition *de* before the adjective or substantive that follows them: as,

<i>Que</i> dit-on <i>de</i> nouveau?	<i>What</i> news is there?
<i>Quoi</i> <i>de</i> plus instructif?	<i>What</i> more instructive?

331. *Quel* relates both to persons and things : as,

*Quel homme est-ce ?*

*What man is it ?*

*Quel temps fait-il ?*

*What weather is it ?*

### EXERCISE LXXX.

Some one entered secretly ; guess who it was. Who would not  
327 — —

love virtue, for its own sake, could he see it in all its beauty ?  
256 ..elle-même.. si on pouvait

What have you read in that book that can have excited in your soul  
328 321 porté

emotion and enthusiasm ? I know not what to think of it. In what  
256 329 118 328

did you find them occupied ? There is in that discourse I know not

what which appears to me designing. What have you remarked  
328 sembler — insidieux.

good, beautiful, and sublime in Homer ? What more brilliant, and  
330 236 330

at the same time more false, than the expressions of a man who has a  
en — 236

great deal of wit, but wants judgment ? He does not  
qui manque de

know what model to follow. I have told you what man it is. Which  
331 331 ce 134

of those ladies do you think the most amiable ? What then must  
trouver 331 donc doit

have been that <sup>2</sup>extraordinary <sup>1</sup>man, to whom seven cities have  
322

contested the glory of having given birth ? One of your brothers  
se disputer 256 four ?

has arrived from the continent : which is it ?  
134

### SECTION V.

#### OF THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

332. *Ce*, when it relates to the first or second person, always governs the verb in the singular : as,

*C' est moi ; c' est nous ; c' est vous.*

333. *Ce* governs the verb in the plural, only when it relates to the third person plural : as,

*Ce sont eux ; ce furent vos ancêtres.*

334. *Ce* supplies the place of *il, ils, elle, elles*, when the verb *être* is followed by a substantive : as,

Lisez Homère et Virgile : *ce* sont deux grands poètes. *Read Homer and Virgil, they are two great poets.*

Avez-vous lu Platon ? *c' est* un beau génie. *Have you read Plato ? he is a great genius.*

335. But when *être* is followed by an adjective, or by a substantive taken adjectively, *il, ils, elle, elles* must be used : as,

Lisez Demosthène et Cicéron : *ils* sont très-éloquents. *Read Demosthenes and Cicero : they are very eloquent.*

Compteriez-vous sur Valère ? *Would you rely upon Valère ?*  
Ignorez-vous qu' *il* est homme à ne jamais revenir de ses premières idées ? *Do you not know that he is a man who will never abandon his first opinions ?*

336. *Ce*, followed by a relative pronoun, represents things only, and is always masculine singular : as,

*Ce qui flatte* est plus dangereux que *ce qui offense*. *What flatters is more dangerous than what offends.*

337. *Ce*, placed at the beginning of a sentence, must be repeated in the second part of that sentence, when it begins with the verb *être* : as,

*Ce que j' aime le plus, c' est* d' être seul. *What I like most, is to be alone.*

338. *Celui, celle*, apply both to persons and things : as,

J' ai vu le portrait du père et *celui* du fils. *I have seen the picture of the father, and that of the son.*

*Celle* que vous haïssez est ma meilleure amie. *She whom you hate is my best friend.*

339. *Celui* is sometimes omitted, to give strength and elegance to the expression : as,

Qui veut trop se faire craindre, *[He]* se fait rarement aimer. *who wishes to make himself too much feared, seldom makes himself beloved.*

### EXERCISE LXXXI.

It is we who have drawn that misfortune upon ourselves, through  
332 s' attirer —

our thoughtlessness and imprudence. It was the Egyptians that  
légèreté 333 321

first observed the course of the stars, regulated the year, and  
 les premiers astre,  
 invented arithmetic. Peruse attentively Plato and Cicero : they are  
 256 Lire 334  
 the two philosophers of antiquity who have given us the most sound  
 256 279 sain  
 and luminous ideas upon morality. If you are intended for the  
 256 ..se destiner. à  
 pulpit, read over and over again Bourdaloue and Massillon : they  
 ..lire et relire sans cesse .. 335  
 are both very eloquent ; but the aim of the former is to convince, and  
 but  
 that of the latter to persuade. What is astonishing is not always  
 336  
 what is pleasing. What the miser thinks least of, is to enjoy  
 Ce à quoi — 337  
 his riches. What pleases us in the writings of the ancients, is to  
 337  
 see that they have taken nature as a model, and that they have  
 256  
 painted her with a noble simplicity. Whichever of you  
 338 que  
 shall be found to excel the others, both in mind and body, shall  
 ..... on juger vainqueur ..... et pour 237  
 be acknowledged king of the island. There are admirable pictures ;  
 these are after the manner of Rubens, and those after the manner  
 139 dans genre  
 of Van Huysum. He that judges of others by himself, is liable to  
 138  
 many mistakes.

## SECTION VI.

## OF THE INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

340. *On* is always subject, and always joined, to the third person singular of the verb : as, *on dit*, they say.

341. Though *on* may generally be considered as a masculine pronoun, there are, however, occasions in which it is evidently feminine : as, *on n'est pas toujours jeune et jolie*.

342. *On* is sometimes followed by an adjective, or a substantive plural : as, *on se battit en désespérés ; est-on des traîtres ?*



343. *Quiconque* is generally masculine, and relates to persons only : as,

*Quiconque* parle.      *Whoever speaks.*

344. *Quelqu'un* applies both to persons and things : as,

J'attends *quelqu'un*.      *I wait for somebody.*

*Quelques-uns* assurent.      *Some people affirm.*

345. *Chacun*, though always singular, when placed after the regimen, takes *son, sa, ses* : as,

Ils ont opiné dans cette affaire, *chacun* selon ses lumières.      *They have given their opinion in that affair, each one according to his knowledge.*

346. But *leur, leurs*, must be used, when *chacun* is placed before the regimen : as,

Ils ont, *chacun* selon leurs lumières, opiné dans cette affaire.      *They have, each one according to his knowledge, given their opinion in that affair.*

347. *Autrui* relates to persons only, and is always preceded by a preposition : as,

La charité se réjouit du bonheur d'*autrui*.      *Charity rejoices in the happiness of others.*

348. *Personne* is always masculine singular, and when it means *nobody*, takes *ne* before the verb : as,

*Personne* n'est aussi heureux qu'elle.      *Nobody is so happy as she.*

349. In interrogative phrases without negation, or in phrases expressing doubt, *personne* signifies *quelqu'un*, anybody : as,

*Personne* oserait-il nier ? Je doute que *personne* soit assez hardi.      *Would any body dare deny ? I doubt whether any body be bold enough.*

350. *Autre* relates both to persons and things : as,

Un *autre* le fera.      *Another will do it.*

Cette plume ne vaut rien ; donnez-m'en une *autre*.      *This pen is good for nothing, give me another one.*

351. *Tel* relates both to persons and things : as,

M. un *tel*.      *Mr. such a one.*

Je ne vis jamais rien de *tel*.      *I never saw the like.*

352. *L' un l' autre* applies both to persons and things . it takes both gender and number : as,

Ils se haïssent *l' un l' autre*. *They hate each other.*

353. If there be any preposition, it must be placed between the two words which compose this pronoun : as,

Elles parlent mal l' une *de* *They speak ill the one of the*  
l' autre. *other.*

354. *L' un et l' autre* requires the verb in the plural : as,

L' un et l' autre *ont* raison. *Both are in the right.*

355. *Tout*, when a pronoun, signifies *all things, every thing* : as,

Il fait *tout* avec esprit. *He does every thing ingeniously.*

### EXERCISE LXXXII.

Do you know what they do here ? *They eat, they drink, they*  
340

dance, they play, they walk ; in a word, they kill time in the gayest  
256

manner possible. Do you sincerely think, said Emily to Lucilla,  
de bonne foi

that when women are sensible and pretty, they are ignorant of it ?  
341 341 —

No, they know it very well ; but if they are watchful over their  
jaloux de

character, they are not proud of these advantages. We are not  
réputation, 342

slaves, to receive such treatment. Whoever of you is bold enough  
essuyer 343

to slander me, I will make him repent it. Will not some one of  
344

these ladies be of the party ? Some people like to read  
344

every thing new. They have all brought offerings to the temple,  
toutes les nouveautés.

every one according to his means and devotion. After a day so  
345 24

usefully spent, they went back, each one to his own home.  
chez 346 — —

Can any one be still so ignorant as not to know that it is from  
Pourrait-il ... 349... dès

the earliest infancy we ought to form the mind, the heart and the taste ?  
tendre 340

## EXERCISE LXXXIII.

Do not to others what you would not wish to be done to you. An  
 347  
 egotist loves nobody, not even his own children. Reason and  
 348 pas 256  
 faith equally demonstrate that we were created for another life. I  
 350  
 never heard any thing similar. The same man sows who often  
 351 — 351 —  
 reaps nothing. The happiness of the people constitutes that of the  
 faire  
 prince; their true interests are connected with each other. They  
 .....lier..... à .... 353....  
 praise one another too much. They both relate the same story,  
 .... 352..... 354 rapporter fait,  
 although neither believes it. I should love them both, if they  
 bien  
 were more attentive to their studies. Every thing which is lofty,  
 ..... 355..... élevé,  
 vast and profound, expands the imagination and dilates the heart.  
 étendre  
 Do you believe all that she says? No; I do not believe the half  
 355 ce que  
 nor the quarter of it.  
 119.

## CHAPTER V.

## OF THE VERB.

## AGREEMENT OF THE VERB WITH THE SUBJECT.

356. The verb agrees in number and person with its subject or nominative: as,

L'oiseau vole. *The bird flies.*

Vous ne volez pas. *You do not fly.*

357. When a verb has two subjects, both singular, it is put in the plural: as,

Mon père et ma mère m'aiment. *My father and mother love me.*

358. When a verb has two or more subjects, of different persons, it is put in the plural, and agrees with the

first person, in preference to the other two, in which case the pronoun *nous* must be placed before the verb : as,

*Vous et moi nous irons.      You and I will go.*

359. But, if the second person should be used with the third, the verb must be put in the second person plural, and be preceded by *vous* : as,

*Vous et lui vous irez.      You and he shall go.*

360. When the verb is preceded by the relative pronoun *qui*, it must agree with the noun or pronoun to which *qui* relates : as,

*Est-ce moi qui l' ai dit ?      Is it I who have said so ?*

*Est-ce vous qui l' avez vu ?      Is it you who have seen him ?*

361. When two or more nouns, united by *ou*, form the subject, the verb agrees with the last only : as,

*Pierre ou Paul le fera.      Peter or Paul will do it.*

362. But, if the words united by *ou* are of different persons, the verb must be put in the plural : as,

*Vous ou moi parlerons.      You or I shall speak.*

*Vous ou votre frère viendrez.      You or your brother will come.*

363. When two subjects are joined together by the conjunction *comme*, *de même que*, *ainsi que*, &c., the verb agrees with the first subject only : as,

*Cette bataille, comme tant d' autres, ne décida de rien.      That battle, like so many others, decided nothing.*

364. When *l' un et l' autre* is the subject, the verb is put in the plural : as,

*L' un et l' autre sont bons.      Both are good.*

365. When *ni l' un ni l' autre* or two nouns joined together by *ni* repeated, are used as nominatives, the verb must be put in the plural, if both concur to the action, or receive it ; and the verb takes *ne* before it : as,

*Ni l' un ni l' autre n' ont fait leur devoir.      Neither the one nor the other have done their duty.*

*Ni la douceur ni la force ne peuvent rien.      Neither mildness nor force can effect any thing.*

366. But the verb is put in the singular, if only one performs the action, or receives it: as,

Ni Smith ni Stone ne sera nommé président.      *Neither Smith nor Stone will be chosen president.*

367. A substantive collective general, that is, a noun representing the whole of the persons or things mentioned, always governs the verb in the singular number: as,

L'armée des confédérés est très-nombreuse.      *The army of the confederates is very numerous.*

368. But when the subject is a collective partitive, that is, a noun or an adverb representing a part of the whole, the verb agrees with the noun following it: as,

Une troupe de barbares déso-      *A troop of barbarians laid*  
lèrent le pays.      *waste the country.*

Peu de gens négligent leurs      *Few people neglect their own*  
intérêts.      *interests.*

### REGIMEN OF VERBS.

369. The object, or regimen, of the verb is either direct or indirect.

370. The direct regimen is that on which the action immediately falls, without the help of any preposition: as,

Je donne une plume.      *I give a pen.*

371. The indirect regimen is that on which the action of the verb cannot fall without the aid of a preposition: as,

Je parle à ma sœur.      *I speak to my sister.*

372. Some verbs admit of both regimens: as,

Je donne une plume à ma sœur.      *I give a pen to my sister.*

373. A verb after which *quelqu' un* or *quelque chose* will form sense, is called active or transitive, and has a direct regimen: as,

Je donne quelque chose.      *I give something.*

374. A verb after which *quelqu' un* or *quelque chose* will not form sense, is called neuter or intransitive, and has an indirect regimen. For instance, we cannot say, *parler quelqu' un, parler quelque chose*, meaning, to speak to some

one, to speak of some thing; but must call in the aid of a preposition, thus, *parler à quelqu' un, parler de quelque chose.*

375. Passive verbs require for their regimen the preposition *de* or *par*.

376. *De* is used when the passive verb expresses a feeling, or an affection of the soul : as,

Cet enfant est aimé de tout le monde.      This child is loved by every body.

377. But *par* must be used when the action expressed by the verb relates to the body only : as,

L'opération fut faite par un chirurgien célèbre.      The operation was performed by an eminent surgeon.

378. Reflective verbs have for their regimen the pronouns *me, te, se, nous, vous* : as,

Je me flatte.      I flatter myself.  
Il se blesse.      He hurts himself.

379. Impersonal verbs generally have an indirect regimen : as,

Il suffit de dire.      It suffices to say.

#### EXERCISE LXXXIV.

The most free of all men, is he who can be free even in slavery. All

356 même

men are inclined to idleness, but the savages of hot countries are the

356 tendre.

356

laziest of all men. His uprightness and honesty make him courted

357

rechercher

by every body. Strength of body and of mind meet

376

256

celle

357 se rencontrer

not always together. You, your friend, and I, have each a different

358

opinion. In our childhood, you and I were pleased with playing

358 se plaire. à

together. You and your friend will come with me. He that

....359....

complains most of mankind is not always he that has most reason

360

256 hommes

être plus fondé

to complain of them. Either persuasion or terror has drawn him

361 entraîner

into the party of the rebels. It is he or I who have said it. Envy,  
 rebelle. 362 256  
 like ambition, is a blind passion. The king, as well as his ministry,  
 363  
 wishes for the public good. I called on your cousins, and I  
 363 — bien. passer chez  
 heard that both had been married a week. Both relate  
 apprendre 364 • étaient • depuis 364 rapporter  
 the same story, though neither believes it to be true. Neither  
 fait, 365 ne penser que subj. pr. 366  
 of them is the author of that book.

— —

## EXERCISE LXXXV.

The crowd followed him as far as to his house. A gang of thieves  
 foule 367 • jusqu' • bande  
 attacked me, and robbed me of every thing I had. Many  
 368 — ... tout ce... que  
 persons experience that human life is, every where, a state in which  
 368  
 much is to be endured, and little to be enjoyed. He caresses them  
 on a beaucoup de peines, de jouissances. 370  
 because he loves them. You knew the importance which you  
 370 savoir  
 parents attached to the success of that affair: why have you not  
 371 réussite  
 hastened to announce it to them? He has made a present to  
 s'empreser de 371 372 372  
 his sister. The French were dreaded by their neighbours, under  
 redouter 376  
 Napoleon. His plan is approved by every body. Was not  
 376  
 England subdued by William the Conqueror, in the year 1066 ?  
 conquérir 377  
 The city of Troy was taken, plundered, and destroyed by the con-  
 Troie saccager, 377  
 federate Greeks, 1148 years before the Christian era. We flatter  
 ourselves that you will meet with a very kind reception. He was  
 378 serez accueilli de la manière la plus honnête.  
 warming himself when I came in. It is of moment to your  
 378 • entrer... •... importer... 379  
 partners that you set off immediately.  
 associé partir sur l'heure.



## USE OF MOODS AND TENSES.

## OF THE INDICATIVE.

380. The present expresses an existing state, or an action occurring at the time when we speak : as,

Mon frère dort.	<i>My brother sleeps.</i>
Je frappe.	<i>I strike.</i>

381. The present is sometimes used to express an action past, in order to give a sort of animated picture of it. Thus, we find in Racine :

J' ai vu votre malheureux fils traîné par ses chevaux. Il veut les rappeler, et sa voix les effraie.	<i>I have seen your unhappy son dragged along by his horses. He calls out to stop them, but his voice frightens them.</i>
--	---

382. In English, for greater accuracy of description, the verb *to be* is frequently used with the participle present ; as, *I am reading, I was writing, &c.* ; in place of, *I read, I wrote, &c.* Such expressions must be rendered as follows : as, *Je lis, I am reading ; j' écrivais, I was writing, &c.* See notes to the verb *parler*, ante, pages 93, 94, 95, for the various meanings of the French tenses.

383. The imperfect expresses a present with respect to something past : as,

Je pensais à vous quand vous entrâtes.	<i>I was thinking of you when you came in.</i>
---	--

384. It expresses also the recurrence of an action at a time which is past : as,

Quand j' étais à la campagne, j' allais souvent à la chasse.	<i>When I was in the country, I often went to the chase.</i>
---	--

And the continuance of an action or state : as,

Il ne méprisait ni ne rebutait personne, et ne croyait être roi que pour faire du bien.	<i>He neither despised nor dis- couraged any one, and thought he was a king only to do good.</i>
---	--

385. The preterit definite is used to express an isolated action, performed at a time which is completely past : as,

Je le vis hier.	<i>I saw him yesterday.</i>
Je reçus une lettre la semaine dernière.	<i>I received a letter last week.</i>

386. The preterit indefinite is used either for a time past which is indeterminate, or for a past of which something still remains : as,

<i>J'ai voyagé en Italie.</i>	<i>I have travelled in Italy.</i>
<i>J'ai déjeuné ce matin à Philadelphie.</i>	<i>I have breakfasted this morning at Philadelphia.</i>

387. The pluperfect denotes one action which took place before another already past ; and also implies a recurrence of the same action : as,

<i>J'avais fini quand vous entrâtes.</i>	<i>I had finished when you came in.</i>
<i>L'hiver dernier, quand nous avions pris le thé, nous allions ordinairement au spectacle.</i>	<i>Last winter, when we had taken tea, we usually went to the play.</i>

388. The preterit anterior expresses one isolated action, performed immediately before another which is also isolated, and both occurring at a time entirely past : as,

<i>Hier, quand nous eûmes pris le thé, nous allâmes au spectacle.</i>	<i>Yesterday, when we had taken tea, we went to the play.</i>
---	---

389. The preterit anterior indefinite expresses an action performed at a time which is not yet past, and before another action : as,

<i>J'ai sorti ce matin dès que j'ai eu déjeuné.</i>	<i>I went out this morning as soon as I had breakfasted.</i>
---	--

390. The future absolute expresses an action which is to take place at a time determined or not : as,

<i>J'irai à la campagne.</i>	<i>I will go to the country.</i>
<i>J'irai demain à la campagne.</i>	<i>I will go to the country tomorrow.</i>

391. The future anterior is used to express one action which will take place before another yet to come : as,

<i>J'aurai fini quand vous arriverez.</i>	<i>I shall have finished when you come.</i>
---	---

392. The future is not used after *si*, when the first verb implies no doubt : as,

<i>Je viendrai, si vous venez.</i>	<i>I will come, if you come.</i>
------------------------------------	----------------------------------

393. But the future *is* used after *si*, when the first verb implies doubt or uncertainty : as,

Je ne sais s' il *viendra*.

*I do not know whether he will come.*

#### OF THE CONDITIONAL.

394. The conditional is the mood which affirms on conditions ; it has two tenses, the *present* and the *past*.

395. The present expresses that a thing would take place on certain conditions : as,

Je le *fais* si j' avais le temps.

*I would do it if I had the time.*

396. The past is used to indicate that an action would have taken place on certain conditions, at a time which is past : as,

Je l' *aurais fait* si j' avais eu le temps.

*I would have done it if I had had the time.*

397. The *second* (not the first) conditional past is used after *si*, when the first verb implies no doubt : as,

Je l' *eusse fait* si j' *eusse eu* le temps.

*I would have done it if I had had the time.*

398. But when the first verb implies doubt, any tense of the conditional may be used after *si*: as,

Je ne sais s' il *serait venu*.

*I do not know if he would have come.*

#### OF THE IMPERATIVE.

399. The imperative is the mood which expresses command, entreaty or reproof: as,

*Soyez vertueux*, et vous jouirez du vrai bonheur.

*Be virtuous, and you will enjoy real happiness.*

#### OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

400. The subjunctive mood is so called because it is dependent on a verb which precedes it ; without which dependence it would not form sense. It implies doubt.

401. The present is used with the present or future of the indicative : as,

Je désire <i>qu' il parte.</i>	<i>I wish he would set off.</i>
Il faudra <i>qu' il parte.</i>	<i>It will be necessary that he should set off.</i>

402. The imperfect is used with all the past tenses of the indicative, and also with the tenses of the conditional : as,

Je désirais <i>qu' il partit.</i>	<i>I wished he would set off.</i>
J' aurais désiré <i>qu' il partit.</i>	<i>I would have wished he would set off.</i>

403. The imperfect is also used with the present or future of the indicative, when followed by a conditional expression : as,

Je doute <i>qu' il partirait</i> maintenant, si on ne l' y contraignait.	<i>I doubt that he would set off now, if he was not compelled to do so.</i>
--	---

404. The preterit is used with the present, or future of the indicative : as,

Je doute <i>qu' il soit parti.</i>	<i>I doubt that he has set off.</i>
Je douterai <i>qu' il soit parti.</i>	<i>I shall doubt that he has set off.</i>

405. The pluperfect is used with all the past tenses of the indicative, and also with the tenses of the conditional : as,

Je doutais <i>qu' il fût parti.</i>	<i>I doubted that he had set off.</i>
Je douterais <i>qu' il fût parti.</i>	<i>I should doubt that he had set off.</i>

406. The pluperfect is also used with the present or future of the indicative, when followed by a conditional expression : as,

Je douterai <i>qu' il fût parti</i> , si on ne l' y eût contraint.	<i>I shall doubt that he would have set off, if he had not been compelled to do so.</i>
--	---

407. The verb must be put in the subjunctive, whenever it is preceded by a superlative : as,

C' est le plus bel enfant <i>que je connaisse.</i>	<i>It is the handsomest child I know.</i>
C' est le meilleur homme <i>que je connaisse.</i>	<i>He is the best man I know.</i>

408. The subjunctive is also used after *le seul*, *le premier*, *le dernier* : as,

C' est le seul <i>que j' aie</i> .	<i>It is the only one I have.</i>
C' est le premier <i>qui se soit trompé</i> .	<i>He is the first that has made a mistake.</i>

409. We make use of the subjunctive after negative or interrogative prepositions implying doubt or uncertainty, and after words which have a negative import : as,

Je ne crois pas <i>qu' il vienne</i> .	<i>I do not think he will come.</i>
Croyez-vous <i>qu' il vienne ?</i>	<i>Do you think he will come ?</i>
Il n' y en a pas un <i>qui puisse le dire</i> .	<i>There is not one who can say so.</i>

410. The verb is always put in the subjunctive, after the conjunctions *quoique*, *malgré que*, and all those that mark a condition or a doubt, such as *à moins que*, *pourvu que*, &c. : as,

<i>Quoiqu' il soit juste.</i>	<i>Although he is just.</i>
<i>Pourvu qu' il soit bon.</i>	<i>Provided he be good.</i>

411. The verb coming in the second part of a sentence may be either in the indicative or in the subjunctive, according to the idea of certainty or uncertainty which we wish to express.

412. It is in the indicative when it expresses something certain : as,

Je cherche quelqu' un <i>qui me rendra service</i> .	<i>I am looking for some one who may render me a service.</i>
--	---

413. But it is put in the subjunctive, when it expresses something uncertain : as,

Je cherche quelqu' un <i>qui me rende service</i> .	<i>I am looking for some one who may render me a service.</i>
---	---

#### OF THE INFINITIVE.

414. The infinitive expresses affirmation in an indefinite manner, without any reference to number or person : as, *chanter*, to sing ; *devoir*, to owe.

415. The preposition *to*, before the infinitive, when represented in French, is rendered by *pour*, *à* or *de* : as,

Il vint *pour* me parler. *He came to speak to me.*  
 Il aime à jouer. *He likes to play.*  
 Il me dit d'aller. *He told me to go.*

416. The infinitive, when preceded by a preposition, is often rendered into English by the participle present: as,

Empêchez-le *de partir*. *Prevent him from setting off.*  
 Il s'en alla *sans dire* un mot. *He went away without saying a word.*

417. It is also rendered by the participle present, when it is the regimen of another verb: as,

Je l'ai entendu *chanter*. *I have heard him singing.*

418. The infinitive expresses neither *present*, *past*, nor *future*, except when it is preceded by other verbs: as,

Je crois le *voir*. *I think I see him.*  
 Je crus l' *entendre*. *I thought I heard him.*  
 Je voudrais le *savoir*. *I wish I knew it.*

### EXERCISE LXXXVI.

He is in his chamber, where he is relaxing his mind from the fatigues of business, by some instructive and agreeable reading. Adrastus thought that he saw and heard Telemachus in a valley at the foot of a hill, where there was a crowd of combatants; he runs, he flies, he longs to sate himself with blood. What are you doing here? I am translating from English into French. I was answering your letter when you arrived. When I was at Paris, I went every morning to take a walk in the Champs Elysées. As soon as we perceived the danger, we warned him of it. I have travelled through almost all Europe, and I have visited the most celebrated places in Asia and Africa.

## EXERCISE LXXXVII.

I had finished the task that you had imposed upon me, when you  
 .....387.....  
 came in. When I was in the country, as soon as I had break-  
 ... 385... à .....387.  
 fasted, I used to go a-hunting. As soon as Cæsar  
 ..... avais coutume  
 had crossed the Rubicon, he had no longer to deliberate; he  
 .388 passer. 385 plus  
 was obliged to conquer or to die. This morning, after he had  
 .385 devoir. vaincre ....  
 breakfasted, I spoke to him. I shall go shortly into the coun-  
 .. 389..... .. 390.. bientôt à  
 try, where I intend to collect plants, in order to perfect myself  
 se proposer de ..herboriser..  
 in the knowledge of botany. I shall have done before you  
 botanique. ....391.... ne  
 set out. I will reward you, if you study your lesson well. You  
 .. 410.. 392  
 do not know whether you will be rewarded.  
 ..393..

## EXERCISE LXXXVIII.

I would settle your business before long, if it depended only  
 ..395 faire.. peu, uniquement  
 upon me. I should have been mortified, if he had lost his  
 de .....396..... ..397...  
 lawsuit. Do you know whether he would do it? Be not  
 procès. ... 398 ... 399  
 fond of praise; but seek virtue, which procures it.  
 passionné pour louange; 399  
 Let us not be deceived by the first appearance of things; but  
 ...399 se laisser prendre .. à  
 let us take time to fix our judgment. I wish you may succeed  
 .se donner. de .....401.....  
 in your undertaking. He will require you to do it. I could not  
 .... 401 ...  
 persuade myself that he was so vain as to aspire to that  
 402 assez — pour  
 place. Though every body says so, I do not believe that he  
 410  
 is gone to Rome. I could wish that the love which we ought to  
 . 409..  
 have for one another, were the principle of all our actions, as it  
 402





composed that song while walking, and I spent two hours in  
 386 .....422..... à  
 correcting it. We saw her dead, and we thought we saw an  
 416 385 ...418..  
 angel asleep. This woman is always occupied in doing good  
 ..à 416..  
 works: you see her constantly consoling the unhappy, relieving  
 œuvre: sans cesse 417 assister  
 the poor, reconciling enemies, and promoting the happiness of every  
 417 ...faire...  
 one around her.

## CHAPTER VI.

### OF THE PARTICIPLE.

419. There are two participles, the *present* and the *past*.

420. The participle present is indeclinable, and always expresses an action: as,

J' ai vu cette femme *obligeant*      *I saw that woman obliging*  
 ses amis.      *her friends.*

J' ai vu ces beautés *charmant*      *I saw those beauties charming*  
 tout le monde.      *every one.*

421. But care must be taken not to confound it with adjectives spelled similarly, and also derived from verbs, which express only a state or a quality, and agree in gender and number with their substantives: as,

Cette femme est *obligeante*.      *That woman is obliging.*  
 Ces beautés sont *charmantes*.      *Those beauties are charming.*

422. The only preposition after which the French use the participle present is *en*: as,

On apprend *en* instruisant les      *We learn by teaching others.*  
 autres.

423. The participle past never agrees with its object direct, when that object is placed *after* it: as,

Elle a *obtenu* des grâces.      *She has obtained some favours.*

424. But it does agree with its object direct, when that object is placed *before* it: as,

Quelles sont les grâces qu' elle a obtenues ?	<i>What are the favours which she has obtained ?</i>
--	--

425. The participle past of a neuter verb always remains invariable: as,

Ils nous ont <i>nui</i> .	<i>They have injured us.</i>
La joie a <i>paru</i> dans leurs yeux.	<i>Joy has appeared in their eyes.</i>

426. The participle past is invariable, when it relates to the pronoun *en*: as,

Il a gagné autant de batailles qu' il <i>en</i> a livré.	<i>He has won as many battles as he has fought.</i>
---	---

427. The participle past of an impersonal verb is always invariable: as,

La chaleur qu' il a <i>fait</i> .	<i>The heat which we have had.</i>
La disette qu' il y a <i>eu</i> .	<i>The dearth which we have had.</i>

428. When accompanied by the verb *être*, expressed or understood, the participle past must be considered as an adjective, since it only indicates the state of the subject, with which it agrees in gender and number: as,

Elle est <i>blessée</i> .	<i>She is wounded.</i>
Ils sont <i>blessés</i> .	<i>They are wounded.</i>
Que de villes <i>détruites</i> !	<i>How many towns destroyed.</i>

429. The participle past of the verbs which are naturally pronominal, agrees with its object, which is always the second pronoun: as,

Ils se sont <i>repentis</i> .	<i>They have repented.</i>
Elle s' est <i>enfuie</i> .	<i>She has fled.</i>

430. The participle past of neuter verbs, which are accidentally made pronominal, is always invariable: as,

Elles se sont <i>nui</i> .	<i>They have injured each other.</i>
Ils se sont <i>parlé</i> .	<i>They have spoken to each other.</i>

431. The participle past of active verbs which are accidentally pronominal, follows the general rule.

## EXERCISE XCI.

Does not every body respect those magistrates, who, forgetting their  
 420  
 own interests, observing the laws, protecting virtue, and restraining  
 réprimer  
 vice, have in view only the welfare of their country? Is not this a  
 bonheur  
 convincing proof of the surprising effects of the loadstone? It is not  
 421 aimant?  
 in giving ourselves up to our passions that we live happy; it is in go-  
 422  
 vernaing them. I have attentively read the papers which you have  
 423  
 sent me, about the affair which I had proposed to you, and I have  
 424 touchant 424  
 found that if I had undertaken it, I should have met with obstacles  
 423 424 423 —  
 which I had not foreseen. Our enemies have injured us more by their  
 424 425  
 moderation than by their valour. Alexander has destroyed more cities  
 423  
 than he has founded. The abundant rains which have fallen this  
 426 427  
 summer have spoiled the harvest. The wicked are always tormented  
 423 428  
 by the remorse of their own conscience. His sister has laughed at  
 429  
 me. How many kings have succeeded one another on the throne of  
 430  
 France?

## CHAPTER VII.

## OF THE ADVERB.

432. The negative, in French, consists of the words *ne pas*, or *ne point*, which are often divided. *Point* is stronger than *pas* : as,

Je ne joue pas.	<i>I do not play.</i>
Je ne joue point.	<i>I do not play at all.</i>

433. When *ne* is accompanied by a word expressing

want or absence, such as *jamais, plus, aucun, &c.*; *pas* or *point* is omitted: as,

Je ne joue jamais.	<i>I never play.</i>
Je ne joue plus.	<i>I play no more.</i>
Je ne joue à aucun jeu.	<i>I do not play at any game.</i>

434. For the sake of elegance, *pas*, or *point* may also be omitted after the verbs *cesser, oser, pouvoir* and *savoir*: as,

Il ne cesse de parler.	<i>He does not leave off speaking.</i>
Il n' ose vous parler.	<i>He dares not speak to you.</i>

135. The particle *ne* is used after the verbs *craindre, trembler, appréhender, avoir peur*, although it does not affect the meaning: as,

Je crains qu' il ne vienne.	<i>I am afraid he will come.</i>
Je tremble que cela n' arrive.	<i>I tremble lest that will happen.</i>

436. *Ne* is also used after the conjunctions *à moins que, de peur que, and de crainte que*: as,

A moins que vous ne lui parliez.	<i>Unless you speak to him.</i>
De peur qu' il ne le sache.	<i>Lest he should know it.</i>

437. *Plus* and *davantage* must not be used indifferently.

*Plus* is followed by *de, or que*: as,

Il a plus de brillant que de solidité.	<i>He has more brilliancy than solidity.</i>
--	--

438. But *davantage* is used alone, and at the end of sentences: as,

La science est estimable, mais la vertu l'est davantage.	<i>Learning is estimable, but virtue is still more so.</i>
--	--

*et a plus de l'arrogance que de la sagesse.*

## EXERCISE XCII.

Never do to others what you would not like them to do unto you.

433 autrui 432 -qu' on fit. —

Your letter is very badly written: I am afraid you have written it

435

hastily. I can not see him without trembling. Use none of

à la hâte.

434

416

Employer 433

these stratagems. He does not know what he says. He is better,  
 434  
 but we are afraid lest the fever should return upon him. For fear he  
 435 — — ...436...  
 should do it. Nobody behaves with more prudence than he. He is  
 433 437  
 rich, but his brother is more so. There is no more of it.

438 438  
~~Il demeure~~ en Autriche.  
~~Elle demeure~~ dans Philadelphie.  
 CHAPTER VIII.

## OF THE PREPOSITION

439. *En* is used in a vague sense, and is seldom followed by the article : as,

Il demeure en France. *He lives in France.*

440. *Dans* is used in a determinate sense : as,

Il demeure dans la province de Middlesex. *He lives in the province of Middlesex.*

Mettez cela dans le tiroir. *Put this in the drawer.*

441. *Avant* denotes priority of time and order : as,

Il est arrivé avant moi. *He has arrived before me.*

442. *Devant* is used for *en présence de* : as,

Il a paru devant le juge. *He has appeared before the judge.*

*El parlait devant le juge.*

## CHAPTER IX.

OF THE CONJUNCTION *que*.

443. *Que* serves to complete a comparison : as,

L'Asie est plus grande que l'Europe. *Asia is larger than Europe.*

444. *Que*, after *ne*, expresses restriction : as,

On ne parle que de cela. *They talk only of that.*

445. *Que* is used to save the repetition of *comme*, *si*, *puisqu'*, &c. : as,

Comme il ne vient pas, et qu'il ne fait rien dire. *As he does not come, and [as] he sends no word.*

Puisqu'il est votre ami, et que vous lui êtes redevable. *Since he is your friend, and [since] you are beholden to him.*





Minerva had infused something terrible into his voice, which  
 mettre je ne sais quoi dont  
 made the neighbouring mountain ring. The voice even of Mars  
 — retentir.

was never louder in Thrace, when he called up the infernal furies.

war and death. The shout of Telemachus animates his people  
 256

with new courage, and chills the enemy with fear. Even Adrastus  
 feels himself confused. A thousand fatal presages thrill him  
 troubler. — le font frémir

with horror; and he is actuated rather by despair than a sedate  
 tranquille

valour. Thrice his trembling knees bent under him, and thrice he  
 drew back without knowing what he did. A swooning pale-  
 416 de défaillance

ness and a cold sweat spread over all his limbs; his hoarse and  
 faltering voice could sound no word distinct; his eyes, sparkling with  
 hésitant

a gloomy fire, seemed to be ready to start out of his head; he looked  
 like Orestes tortured by the Furies; all his motions were convulsive.  
 agiter

Now he begins to believe that there are Gods; he fancies that he sees  
 Alors

them incensed against him, and that he hears a hollow voice arising  
 from the depths of hell, and calling him to everlasting torment. Every  
 thing makes him sensible of a heavenly and invisible hand stretched  
 ...lui faire sentir...

over his head, and ready to fall heavy upon him. Hope was extin-  
 s' appesantir 256

guished in his heart; and his courage vanished like the daylight,  
 when the sun sinks into the bosom of the waves, and the earth is  
 enveloped in the shades of night.

#### EXERCISE XCIV.

Adrastus, whose tyranny would already have been too long, if the  
 earth had not needed such a scourge, the impious Adrastus, had filled  
 up the measure of his iniquity, and his hour was come. He madly  
 forcené  
 runs to meet his inevitable fate; horror, stinging remorse, consterna-

tion, fury, rage, despair, attended his steps. He scarcely sees Te-  
marcher avec lui.

lemachus ; but he fancies he sees Avernus yawn, and whirlwinds of  
 256

flames issuing from dreary Phlegethon, ready to swallow him up.  
 He cries out, and his mouth remains open, without being able to  
 utter a word. So a man asleep in a frightful dream opens his lips,  
 286

and strives to speak ; but his speech continually fails him, and he seeks  
 it in vain. Adrastus, with a trembling, hasty hand, hurls his javelin  
 at Telemachus. The latter is undaunted, as the friend of the Gods,  
 and covers himself with his shield. Victory already seems to over-  
 shadow him with her wings, and suspend a crown over his head. A  
 calm and composed courage glittered in his eyes, and one would  
 doux paisible

have taken him for Minerva herself, so wise and discreet does he  
 mesuré

appear in the greatest dangers. The javelin of Adrastus is repelled  
 by the shield. Upon which the Daunian instantly draws his sword,  
 to deprive the son of Ulysses of the advantage of throwing his jave-  
 lin in his turn. 'Telemachus, seeing Adrastus with his sword in  
 — la a

his hand, immediately draws his also, and drops his useless javelin.  
 286

### EXERCISE XCV.

When the other combatants on each side saw them thus closely  
 engaged, they laid down their arms to gaze upon them, and from this  
 single combat expected the issue of the war. Their swords, bright  
 as the flashes whence the thunderbolts are hurled, frequently cross  
 each other, and deal their fruitless blows upon their polished and  
 porter des

resounding armour. The two combatants stretch themselves out,  
 shrink up, stoop down, rise again in an instant, and at length  
 grapple with each other. The ivy growing at the foot of an elm,  
 ..... se saisir .....

does not more closely embrace its hard and knotty trunk with its  
 entwining arms, even to its highest branches, than the two com-  
 batants grasp each other. Adrastus had lost nothing of his strength ;  
 but that of Telemachus was not yet mature. Adrastus makes several  
 efforts to stagger, and throw his antagonist by surprise. At last he  
 endeavours to seize the sword of the young Greek, but in vain ; for

the moment he attempts it, Telemachus lifts him from the ground, and throws him on the sand. In this dreadful moment, the wretch who had so long despised the gods, betrays an unmanly fear of death;

montre lâche

he is ashamed to ask his life, and yet cannot help manifesting his desire to live. He endeavours to move the compassion of Telemachus. Son of Ulysses, said he, I at length acknowledge the righteous gods: they punish me as I have deserved. It is misfortune only that opens our eyes to truth: I now see it, and it condemns me; but let an unhappy prince bring your father, now distant from his country, to your remembrance, and touch your breast with compassion!

Telemachus, who kept the tyrant under him with his knee, and had already raised his sword to plunge it into his throat, immediately replied: I sought nothing but victory, and the peace of the nations I came to assist; I do not delight in bloodshed. Live, then,

aimer à répandre le sang.

Adrastus, but live to repair your faults; restore every thing which you have usurped; re-establish peace and justice on the coast of

256

Great Hesperia, which you have stained by numberless massacres and treacheries; live, and become another man. Learn by your fall that the gods are righteous; that the wicked are miserable; that they deceive themselves in seeking for happiness in violence,

— 256

inhumanity and falsehood; and, in short, that nothing is so delightful

237

and happy as a plain and steady virtue. Give us, as hostages, your son Metrodorus, with twelve of the principal persons of your nation

## EXERCISE XCVI.

This said, Telemachus suffers Adrastus to rise, and holds out A ces paroles, his hand to him, without suspecting his treachery: but the tyrant immediately darts another javelin at him, which was very short, and which he had kept concealed. It was so sharp, and so artfully thrown, that it would have pierced Telemachus's armour, if it had not been divine. Adrastus at the same time runs behind a tree, to

avoid the pursuit of the young Greek. Telemachus then cries out :  
 Bear witness, Daunians, the victory is ours ! The impious wretch  
*Vous le voyez,*

saves himself only by treachery. He that fears not the gods, is  
 afraid of death. On the contrary, he that fears the gods, fears nothing  
 but them. In speaking these words, he advances towards the  
 Daunians, and makes a sign to his people, who were on the other  
 side of the tree, to cut off the retreat of Adrastus. The tyrant,  
 perceiving his situation, pretends as if he would go back again,  
*voir* *fait semblant . . . . . de retourner sur ses pas . . .*

and attempts to break through the Cretans who obstruct his passage.  
 But Telemachus, swift as the thunderbolt hurled by the hand of the  
 father of the gods from the top of Olympus on the heads of the guilty,  
 flies instantly on his enemy : he seizes him with his victorious hand,  
*de un*

he throws him on the earth, as the cruel north wind beats down the  
 tender harvests which gild the fields. He hears him no more,  
*écouter*

though the impious wretch makes a second attempt to abuse the  
 goodness of his heart. He plunges his sword in his breast, and  
 hurls him headlong into the flames of dreary Tartarus, a punishment  
*. . . le précipiter . . . . .* 256 266

worthy of his crimes.—FENELON.

## THE QUESTIONS LEFT BY MINOS.

### EXERCISE XCVII.

THE chief of the elders opened the book of the laws of Minos ; it was  
 a large volume, which was usually locked up in a golden box, with  
 perfumes. All the old men kissed it with respect ; for they said, that  
 next to the gods, from whom good laws proceed, nothing ought to be  
 sacred to men as laws designed to render them good, wise, and happy.  
 Those who are entrusted with the execution of the laws for the go-  
 vernment of the people, ought themselves always to be governed by  
 the laws : it is the law, and not the man, which ought to reign. Such  
 was the discourse of these sages. He who presided over them proposed  
 three questions, which were to be resolved by the laws of Minos.

The First Question was—Who is the most free of all men? Some answered that it was a king who has an absolute dominion over his subjects, and was victorious over all his enemies. Others maintained that it was a rich man, who could gratify all his desires. Others said, that it was a man who was not married, and was travelling during his whole life through divers countries, without ever being subject to the laws of any nation. Others imagined, that it was a barbarian, who, subsisting by hunting in the midst of the woods, was independent of all government, and free from every want. Others believed, that it was a man lately made free, because, by passing from the rigours of slavery, he enjoyed, more than any body else, the sweets of liberty. And lastly, others bethought themselves to say that it was a dying man, because death freed him from every thing, and that all mankind united had no longer any power over him.

### EXERCISE XCVIII.

When my turn came, I was at no loss for an answer, because I had not forgotten what Mentor had often told me. “The most free of all men,” said I, “is he who can be free in slavery itself. In what country or condition soever a man may be, he is perfectly free, provided he fears the gods, and fears nothing but them. In a word, the truly free man is he who, void of all fears and all desires, is subject only to the gods and reason.” The elders looked on each other with a smile, and were surprised to see that my answer was precisely that of Minos.

They then proposed the Second Question, in these words:—Who is the most unhappy of all men? Every one said what occurred to his mind. One said, It is a man who has neither money, nor health, nor honour. Another said, It is one who has no friend. Others maintained, that it was a man who has ungrateful and degenerate children. There came a sage of the isle of Lesbos, who said: The most unhappy of all men, is he who thinks himself so; for unhappiness arises less from what we suffer, than from the impatience with which we aggravate our misery. At these words, the whole assembly shouted; they applauded the sage Lesbian, believing that he would carry the prize as to this question. But they asked my opinion, and I answered—according to Mentor’s maxims—“The most unhappy of all men, is a king who expects to be happy by rendering other men

miserable: his blindness doubles his unhappiness; for, not knowing his misfortune, he cannot cure himself of it; he is afraid even to know it: truth cannot pierce through the crowd of flatterers, to arrive at him. He is the slave of his passions, he knows not his duty; he has never tasted the pleasure of doing good, nor felt the charms of virtue; he is wretched, and deserves to be so; his wretchedness increases daily; he runs to his destruction, and the gods are preparing eternal punishment for him." The whole assembly owned that I had outdone the Lesbian sage, and the elders declared that I had hit upon the true sense of Minos.

### EXERCISE XCIX.

It was asked, Which of the two is preferable: a king victorious and invincible in war; or a king without experience in war, but qualified to govern his people wisely in peace? The majority answered, that a king who is invincible in war was to be preferred. What profits it, said they, to have a king who knows to govern well in peace, if he knows not to defend his country in time of war? His enemies will vanquish him, and reduce his people to slavery. Others, on the contrary, maintained, that a pacific king would be better, because he would fear war, and take care to avoid it. Others said, that a victorious king would labour to advance his subjects' glory as well as his own, and would render them masters of other nations; whereas, a pacific king would keep them in shameful cowardice. My opinion was asked, and I answered thus:

"A king who is able to govern only in peace, or only in war, and is not capable of conducting his people in both these circumstances, is but half a king. But, if you compare a king who understands nothing but war, to a wise king, who, without understanding war himself, is capable of maintaining it on occasion by his generals, I think him preferable to the other. A king entirely turned to war, would be so often making it, in order to extend his dominions and glory, that he would ruin his people: what avails it to them that their prince subdues other nations, if they themselves are miserable under his reign? Besides, long wars always draw after them many disorders; the victors themselves grow licentious in these times of confusion. Consider how dear it has cost Greece to triumph over Troy: she was deprived of her kings for more than ten years. Whilst every thing is inflamed by



war, laws, agriculture, and the arts languish. Even the best princes, while they are engaged in it, are constrained to commit the greatest of evils, which is, to wink at licentiousness, and to employ wicked men. How many profligate wretches are there whom one would punish in time of peace, but whose crimes are even rewarded during the disorders of war! Never had any nation a conquering monarch, without having suffered much from his ambition. A conqueror, intoxicated with his glory, ruins his victorious nation almost as much as the nations he has conquered. A king who has not the qualifications requisite for peace, cannot make his subjects taste the fruits of a war happily ended. He resembles a man who not only can defend his own field, but is able to usurp his neighbour's, although he neither can plough nor sow it in order to reap the harvest. Such a man seems born to destroy, to ravage, to overturn the world, and not to render a nation happy by the wisdom of his government.

#### EXERCISE C.

“Let us now advert to the pacific king. He is not, indeed, qualified to make great conquests; that is, he is not born to trouble the repose of his people, by seeking to vanquish other nations whom justice has not subjected to him; but he is really adapted to govern in peace. He has all the qualifications which are necessary to secure his subjects against their enemies: for he is just, moderate, and easy with regard to his neighbours; he never undertakes any thing against them which may disturb the public peace, and he is faithful to his alliances. His allies love him, do not fear him, and have an entire confidence in him. If they have a restless, haughty and ambitious neighbour, all the adjacent princes who fear the turbulent, and have no jealousy of the peaceful king, join themselves to the latter, in order to hinder him from being oppressed. His probity, his sincerity, his moderation, make him the arbiter of all the neighbouring nations. Whilst the enterprising monarch is hated by all the rest, and continually in danger of their confederacies, the peaceful prince has the glory to be, as it were, the father and guardian of the others. These are the advantages which he has abroad; those he enjoys at home are still more solid. Since he is qualified to govern in peace, I suppose that he governs by the wisest laws. He suppresses pomp, luxury, and all the arts which serve only to cherish vice; he makes those arts flourish



which are subservient to the real wants of life; above all, he causes his subjects to apply themselves to agriculture, and he thereby procures them plenty of all necessities. These laborious people, simple in their manners, accustomed to live on a little, and easily getting their livelihood by the culture of their lands, increase daily. Let a neighbouring conqueror attack them; he will find them, perhaps, not very expert in forming camps, in ranging themselves in order of battle, or in erecting machines to besiege a city; but he will find them invincible by their numbers, by their courage, by their patience of fatigues, by their habit of bearing poverty, by their vigour in battle, and by a virtue which ill success itself cannot abate. Besides, if this king has not sufficient experience to command his armies himself, he will cause them to be commanded by men who are capable of it, and will know how to make use of them, without losing his authority. In the mean while, he will obtain assistance from his allies; his subjects will rather die than submit to the yoke of a violent and unjust prince; and even the gods themselves will fight for him. Behold what resources he will have amidst the greatest dangers! I conclude, therefore, that a peaceful king, who is ignorant of war, is a very imperfect king, since he knows not to discharge one of his greatest duties, which consists in subduing his enemies; but I add, however, that he is infinitely superior to a conqueror, who wants the qualities necessary in peace, and is fit only for war."

All the elders declared that I had spoken like Minos.—FENELON

---

## THE TRANSMIGRATIONS OF INDUR.

### EXERCISE CI.

At the time when fairies and genii possessed the powers which they have now lost, there lived in the country of the Brahmins a man named Indur, who was distinguished, not only for that gentleness of disposition and humanity towards all living creatures, which are so much cultivated among those people, but for an insatiable curiosity respecting the nature and way of life of all animals. In pursuit of knowledge of this kind he would frequently spend the night among lonely rocks, or in the midst of thick forests; and there, under shelter of a hanging cliff, or mounted upon a high tree, he would watch the

motions and actions of all the animals that seek their prey in the night; and remaining in the same spot till the break of day, he would observe these tribes of creatures retiring to their dens, and all others coming forth to enjoy the beams of the rising sun. On these occasions, if he saw any opportunity of exercising his benevolence towards animals in distress, he never failed to make use of it; and many times rescued the small birds from the pitiless hawk, and the lamb or kid from the gripe of the wolf and lynx. One day, as he was sitting on a tree in the forest, a little frolicsome monkey, in taking a long leap from one bough to another, chanced to miss his hold, and fell from a great height to the ground. As he lay there, unable to move, Indur espied a large venomous serpent advancing to make the poor defenceless creature his prey. He immediately descended from his post, and taking the little monkey in his arms, ran with it to the tree, and gently placed it upon a bough. In the mean time, the enraged serpent, pursuing him, overtook him before he could mount the tree, and bit him in the leg. Presently the limb began to swell, and the effects of the venom became visible over Indur's whole frame. He grew faint, sick, and pale; and, sinking on the ground, was sensible that his last moments were fast approaching. As thus he lay, he was surprised to hear a human voice from the tree; and looking up, he beheld, on the bough where he had placed the monkey, a beautiful woman, who thus addressed him:—"Indur, I am truly grieved that thy kindness to me should have been the cause of thy destruction. Know, that in the form of the poor monkey, it was the potent fairy Perezinda to whom thou gavest succour. Obligated to pass a certain number of days every year under the shape of an animal, I had chosen this form; and, though not mortal, I should have suffered extreme agonies from the bite of the serpent, hadst thou not so humanely assisted me. It is not in my power to prevent the fatal effect of the poison; but I am able to grant thee any wish thou shalt form respecting the future state of existence to which thou art now hastening. Speak, then, before it be too late, and let me show my gratitude."

"Great Perezinda!" replied Indur, "since you deign so bounteously to return my service, this is the request that I make: In all my transmigrations may I retain a rational soul, with the memory of the adventures I have gone through; and when death sets me

free from one body, may I instantly animate another in the prime of its powers and faculties, without passing through the helpless state of infancy." "It is granted," answered the fairy; and immediately breaking a small branch from the tree, and breathing on it, she threw it down to Indur, and bade him hold it fast in his hand. He did so, and presently expired.

## EXERCISE CII.

Instantly, he found himself in a green valley, by the side of a clear stream, grazing amid a herd of *antelopes*. He admired his elegant shape, sleek, spotted skin, and polished spiral horns; and drank with delight of the cool rivulet, cropped the juicy herb, and sported with his companions. Soon an alarm was given of the approach of an enemy; and they all set off with the swiftness of the wind to the neighbouring immense plains, where they were soon out of the reach of injury. Indur was highly delighted with the ease and rapidity of his motions; and snuffing the keen air of the desert, bounded away, scarcely deigning to touch the ground with his feet. This way of life went on very pleasantly for some time, till at length the herd was one morning alarmed with noises of trumpets, drums, and loud shouts, on every side. They started and ran first to the right, then to the left, but were continually driven back by the surrounding crowd, which now appeared to be a whole army of hunters, with the king of the country and all his nobles, assembled on a solemn chase, after the manner of the eastern people. And now the circle began to close, and numbers of affrighted animals, of various kinds, thronged together in the centre, keeping as far as possible from the dangers that approached them from all quarters. The huntsmen were now come near enough to reach their game with their arrows; and the prince and his lords shot at them as they passed and repassed, killing and wounding great numbers. Indur and his surviving companions, seeing no other means of escape, resolved to make a bold push towards that part of the ring which was the most weakly guarded; and though many perished in the attempt, yet a few, leaping over the heads of the people, got clear away; and Indur was among the number. But whilst he was scouring over the plain, rejoicing in his good fortune and conduct, an enemy, swifter than himself, overtook him. This was a falcon, which, let loose by one of the huntsmen, dashed

like lightning after the fugitives; and alighting upon the head of Indur, began to tear his eyes with his beak, and flap his wings over his face. Indur, terrified and blinded, knew not which way he went; and, instead of proceeding straight forwards, turned round, and came again towards the hunters. One of these, riding full speed, with a javelin in his hand, came up to him, and ran the weapon in his side. He fell down, and by repeated wounds was soon despatched.

### EXERCISE CIII.

When the struggle of death was over, Indur was equally surprised and pleased on finding himself soaring high in the air, as one of a flight of *wild geese*, in their annual migration to breed in the arctic regions. With vast delight he sprang forward, on easy wing, through the immense fields of air, and surveyed beneath him extensive tracts of earth, perpetually varying with plains, mountains, rivers, lakes, and woods. At the approach of night the flock lighted on the ground, and fed on the green corn or grass; and at daybreak they were again on wing, arranged in a regular wedge-like body, with an experienced leader at their head. Thus for many days they continued their journey, passing over countries inhabited by various nations, till at length they arrived in the remotest part of Lapland, and settled in a wide marshy lake, filled with numerous reedy islands, and surrounded on all sides with dark forests of pine and birch. Here, in perfect security from man and hurtful animals, they followed the great business of breeding and providing for their young, living plentifully upon the insects and aquatic reptiles that abounded in this sheltered spot. Indur with great pleasure exercised his various powers, of swimming, diving, and flying; sailing round the islands, penetrating into every creek and bay, and visiting the deepest recesses of the woods. He surveyed with astonishment the sun, instead of rising and setting, making a complete circle in the heavens, and cheering the earth with a perpetual day. Here he met with innumerable tribes of kindred birds, varying in size, plumage and voice, but all passing their time in a similar manner, and furnished with the same powers for providing food and a safe retreat for themselves and their young. The whole lake was covered with parties fishing or sporting, and resounded with their loud cries; while the islands were filled with their nests, and new broods of young were continually coming forth, and launching

upon the surface of the waters. One day Indur's curiosity having led him at a distance from his companions to the woody border of the lake, he was near paying dear for his heedlessness; for a fox, that lay in wait among the bushes, sprang upon him, and it was with the utmost difficulty, and not without the loss of some feathers, that he broke from his hold.

Summer now drawing to an end, the vast congregation of water-fowl began to break up; and large bodies of them daily took their way southwards, to pass the winter in climates where the waters are never so frozen as to become uninhabitable by the feathered race. The wild geese to whom Indur belonged, proceeded with their young ones by long daily journeys across Sweden, the Baltic sea, Poland and Turkey, to Lesser Asia, and finished their journey at the celebrated plains on the banks of the Cayster, a noted resort for their species ever since the age of Homer. Here they soon recruited from the fatigue of their march, and enjoyed themselves in the delicious climate till winter. This season, though here extremely mild, yet making the means of sustenance somewhat scarce, they were obliged to make foraging excursions to the cultivated lands in the neighbourhood. Having committed great depredations upon a field of young wheat, the owner spread a net on the ground, in which Indur, with several of his companions, had the misfortune to be caught. No mercy was shown them, but as they were taken out, one by one, their necks were all broken.

#### EXERCISE CIV.

Indur was not immediately sensible of the next change he underwent, which was into a *dormouse*, fast asleep in his hole at the foot of a bush. As it was in a country where the winters are pretty severe, he did not awake for some weeks; when, a thaw having taken place, and the sun beginning to warm the earth, he unrolled himself one day, stretched, opened his eyes, and not being able to make out where he was, he roused a female companion whom he found by his side. When she was sufficiently awakened, and they both began to feel hungry, she led the way to a magazine of nuts and acorns, where they made a comfortable meal, and soon fell asleep again. This nap having lasted a few days, they awoke a second time, and having again eaten, they ventured to crawl to the mouth of their

hole, where, pulling away some withered grass and leaves, they peeped out into the open air. After taking a turn or two in the sun, they grew chill, and went down again, stopping up the entrance after them. The cold weather returning, they took another long nap, till at length, spring being fairly set in, they roused in earnest, and began to make daily excursions abroad. Their winter stock of provisions being now exhausted, they were for some time reduced to great straits, and obliged to dig for roots and pignuts. Their fare was mended as the season advanced, and they made a nest near the bottom of a tree, where they brought up a young family. They never ranged far from home, nor ascended the higher branches of the tree, and passed a great part of their time in sleep, even during the midst of summer. When autumn came, they were busily employed in collecting the nuts, acorns, and other dry fruits that fell from the trees, and laying them up in their storehouse under ground. One day, as Indur was closely engaged in this occupation, at some distance from his dwelling, he was seized by a wild cat, which, after tormenting him for a time, gave him a gripe, and put him out of his pain.

#### EXERCISE CV.

From one of the smallest and most defenceless of animals, Indur found himself instantly changed into a majestic *elephant*, in a lofty forest of the isle of Ceylon. Elated with this wonderful advancement in the scale of creation, he stalked along with conscious dignity, and surveyed with pleasing wonder his own form and that of his companions, together with the rich scenery of the ever verdant woods, which perfumed the air with their spicy odour, and lifted their tall heads to the clouds. Here, fearing no injury, and not desiring to do any, the gigantic herd roamed at large, feeding on the green branches which they tore down with their trunks, bathing in deep rivers during the heat of the day, and reposing in the depths of the forests, reclined against the massy trunks of trees by night. It was long before Indur met with any adventure that could lead him to doubt his security. But one day, having penetrated into a close entangled thicket, he espied, lurking under the thick covert, a grim tiger, whose eyes flashed rage and fury. Though the tiger was one of the largest of his species, yet his bulk was trifling compared to that of an elephant, a single foot of which seemed sufficient to crush him; yet the fierce-



ness and cruelty of his looks, his angry growl, and grinning teeth, struck some terror into Indur. There was little time, however, for reflection ; for when Indur had advanced a single step, the tiger, setting up a roar, sprang to meet him, attempting to seize his lifted trunk. Indur was dexterous enough to receive him upon one of his tusks, and exerting all his strength, threw the tiger to a great distance; he was somewhat stunned by the fall, but recovering, renewed the assault with redoubled fury. Indur again, and a third time, threw him off; after which the tiger, turning about, bounded away into the midst of the thicket. Indur drew back, and rejoined his companions, with some abatement in the confidence he had placed in his size and strength, which had not protected him from undergoing so dangerous an attack.

### EXERCISE CVI.

Soon after, he joined the rest of the herd in an expedition beyond the bounds of the forest, to make depredations on some fields of maize. They committed great havoc, devouring part, but tearing up and trampling down much more ; when the inhabitants, taking the alarm, assembled in great numbers, and with fierce shouts and flaming brands, drove them back to the woods. Not contented with this, they were resolved to make them pay for the mischief they had done, by taking some prisoners. For this purpose, they enclosed a large space among the trees with strong posts and stakes, bringing it to a narrower and narrower compass, and ending at last in a passage only capable of admitting one elephant at a time. This was divided by strong cross-bars, which would lift up and down, into several apartments. They then sent out some tame female elephants, bred to the business, who, approaching the herd of wild ones, inveigled the males to follow them towards the enclosures. Indur was among the first who was decoyed by their artifices ; and with some others following heedlessly, he got into the narrowest part of the inclosure, opposite to the passage. Here they stood awhile doubting whether they should go further. But the females leading the way, and uttering the cry of invitation, they ventured at length to follow. When a sufficient number was in the passage, the bars were let down by men placed for the purpose, and the elephants were fairly caught in a trap. As soon as they were sensible of their situation, they fell into a fit of rage, and with all their



efforts endeavoured to break through. But the hunters throwing nooses over them, bound them fast with strong ropes and chains to the posts on each side, and thus kept them without food or sleep for three days; when, being exhausted with hunger and fatigue, they gave signs of sufficient tameness. They were now let out one by one, and bound, each of them, to two large tame elephants, with riders on their backs, and thus without resistance were led away close prisoners. They were then put into separate stables, and by proper discipline were presently rendered quite tame and gentle.

### EXERCISE CVII.

Not long after, Indur, with five more, was sent over from Ceylon to the continent of India, and sold to one of the princes of the country. He was now trained to all the services elephants are there employed in: which were, to carry persons on his back in a kind of sedan or litter, to draw cannon, ships, and other great weights, to kneel and rise at command, make obeisance to his lord, and perform all the motions and attitudes he was ordered. Thus he lived a long time, well fed and caressed, clothed in costly trappings on days of ceremony, and contributing to the pomp of eastern royalty. At length a war broke out, and Indur came to be employed in a different scene. After proper training, he was marched, with a number of his fellows, into the field, bearing on his back a small wooden tower, in which were placed some soldiers, with a small field-piece. They soon came in sight of the enemy, and both sides were drawn up for battle. Indur and the rest were urged forwards by their leaders, wondering at the same time at the scene in which they were engaged, so contrary to their nature and manners. Presently all was involved in smoke and fire. The elephants advancing, soon put to flight those who were drawn up before them; but their career was stopped by a battery of cannon, which played furiously against them. Their vast bodies offered a fair mark to the balls, which presently struck down some, and wounded others. Indur received a shot on one of his tusks, which broke it, and put him to such pain and affright, that, turning about, he ran with all speed over the plain; and falling in with a body of their own infantry, he burst through, trampling down whole ranks, and filling them with terror and confusion. His leader having now lost all command over him, and finding him hurtful only to his own party, applied the sharp

instrument he carried to the nape of his neck, and driving it in with all his force, pierced his spinal marrow, so that he fell lifeless to the ground

### EXERCISE CVIII.

In the next stage of his existence, Indur, to his great surprise, found even the vast bulk of the elephant prodigiously exceeded: for he was now a *whale* of the largest species, rolling in the midst of the arctic seas. As he darted along, the lash of his tail made whirlpools in the mighty deep. When he opened his immense jaws, he drew in a flood of brine, which, on rising to the surface, he spouted out again in a rushing fountain, that rose high in the air with the noise of a mighty cataract. All the other inhabitants of the ocean seemed as nothing to him. He swallowed, almost without knowing it, whole shoals of the smaller kinds; and the larger swiftly turned aside at his approach. "Now," he cried to himself, "whatever other evils may await me, I am certainly secure from the molestation of other animals; for what is the creature that can dare to cope with me, or measure his strength with mine? Having said this, he saw swimming near him a fish not a quarter of his length, armed with a dreadful row of teeth. This was a grampus, which directly flying upon Indur, fastened on him, and made his great teeth meet in his flesh. Indur roared with pain, and lashed the sea till it was all in a foam; but could neither reach nor shake off his cruel foe. He rolled over and over, rose and sank, and exerted all his boasted strength; but to no purpose. At length the grampus quitted his hold, and left him not a little mortified with the adventure. This was, however, forgotten, and Indur received pleasure from his new situation as he roamed through the boundless fields of ocean, now diving to its very bottom, now shooting swiftly to the surface, and sporting with his companions in unwieldy gambols. Having chosen a mate, he took his course with her southwards, and in due time brought up two young ones, of whom he was extremely fond. The summer season being arrived, he more frequently than usual rose to the surface, and basking in the sunbeams, floated unmoved with a large part of his huge body above the waves. As he was thus one day enjoying a profound sleep, he was awakened by a sharp instrument penetrating deep into his back. Instantly he sprang away with the swiftness of lightning, and feeling the weapon still

sticking, he dived into the recesses of the deep, and stayed there till want of air obliged him to ascend to the surface. Here another harpoon was plunged into him, the smart of which again made him fly from his unseen foes; but after a shorter course, he was again compelled to rise, much weakened by the loss of blood, which, gushing in a torrent, tinged the waters as he passed. Another wound was inflicted, which soon brought him almost lifeless to the surface: and the line fastened to the first harpoon being now pulled in, this enormous creature was brought, an unresisting prey, to the side of a ship, where he was soon quite despatched, and then cut to pieces.

### EXERCISE CIX.

The soul of this huge carcass had next a much narrower lodging, for *Indur* was changed into a *bee*, which, with a great multitude of its young companions, was on flight in search of a new settlement, their parents having driven them out of the hive, which was unable to contain them all. After a rambling excursion, the queen, by whom all their motions were directed, settled on the branch of a lofty tree. They all immediately clustered round her, and soon formed a large black bunch, depending from the bough. A man presently planting a ladder, ascended with a bee-hive, and swept them in. After they were quietly settled in their new habitation, they were placed on a stand in the garden, along with some other colonies, and left to begin their labours. Every fine morning, as soon as the sun was up, the greater part of them sallied forth, and roamed over the garden and the neighbouring fields in search of fresh and fragrant flowers. They first collected a quantity of gluey matter, with which they lined all the inside of their houses. Then they brought wax, and began to make their cells, building them with the utmost regularity, though it was their first attempt, and they had no teacher. As fast as they were built, some were filled with liquid honey gathered from the nectaries of flowers: and as they filled the cells, they sealed them up with a thin covering of wax. In other cells the queen bee deposited her eggs, which were to supply a new progeny for the ensuing year. Nothing could be a more pleasing sight, than to behold on a sunshiny day the insects continually going forth to their labour, while others were as constantly arriving at the mouth of the hole, either with yellow balls of wax under their thighs, or full of the honey which they had drawn

in with their trunks, for the purpose of spouting it out into the cells of the honeycomb. Indur felt much delight in this useful and active way of life, and was always one of the first abroad at dawn, and latest home in the evening. On rainy and foggy days they stayed at home, and employed themselves in finishing their cells, and all the necessary work, within doors; and Indur, though indued with human reason, could not but admire the readiness with which he and the rest formed the most regular plans of work, all corresponding in design and execution, guided by instinct alone.

The end of autumn now approaching, the bees had filled their combs with honey; and nothing more being to be got abroad, they stayed within doors, passing most of their time in sleep. They ate of their provisions with great frugality; and all their meals were made in public, none daring to make free with the common stock by himself. The owner of the hives now came and took them one by one into his hands, that he might judge by the weight whether or not they were full of honey. That in which Indur was, proved to be one of the heaviest; and it was therefore resolved to take the contents. For this purpose, one cold night, when the bees were all fast asleep, the hive was placed over a hole in the ground, in which were put brimstone matches set on fire. The fumes rose into the hive, and soon suffocated great part of the bees, and stupefied the rest, so that they all fell from the combs. Indur was amongst the dead.

### EXERCISE CX.

He soon revived in the form of a young *rabbit* in a spacious warren. This was like a populous town; being every where hollowed by burrows running deep under ground, and each inhabited by one or more families. In the evening the warren was covered with a vast number of rabbits, old and young, some feeding, others frisking about, and pursuing one another in wanton sport. At the least alarm, they all hurried into the holes nearest them; and were in an instant safe from enemies, who either could not enter their burrows, or could not get at them there on account of the numerous ways and turnings in the earth, communicating with each other, so as to afford easy means of escape. Indur delighted much in this secure and social life; and taking a mate, was soon the father of a numerous offspring. Several of the little ones, however, not being sufficiently careful, fell a prey

either to hawks and crows, continually hovering over the warren, or to cats, foxes, and other wild quadrupeds, which used every art to catch them at a distance from their holes. Indur himself ran several hazards. He was once very near being caught by a little dog trained for the purpose, which kept playing round for a considerable time, not seeming to attend to the rabbits, till having got near, he all at once darted into the midst of them. Another time he received some shot from a sportsman who lay on the watch behind the hedge adjoining the warren.

The number of rabbits here was so great, that a hard winter coming on, which killed most of the vegetables, or buried them deep under the snow, they were reduced to great straits, and many were famished to death. Some turnips and hay, however, which were laid for them, preserved the greater part. The approach of spring renewed their sport and pleasure ; and Indur was made the father of another family. One night, however, was fatal to them all. As they were sleeping, they were alarmed by the attack of a ferret ; and running with great speed to the mouth of their burrow to escape it, they were all caught in nets placed over their holes. Indur, with the rest, was despatched by a blow on the back of the neck, and his body was sent to the nearest market town.

### EXERCISE CXI.

His next change was into a young *mastiff*, brought up in a farm-yard. Having nearly acquired his full size, he was sent as a present to a gentleman in the neighbourhood, who wanted a faithful guard for his house and ground. Indur presently attached himself to his master and all his family, and showed every mark of a noble and generous nature. Though fierce as a lion whenever he thought the persons or properties of his friends invaded, he was as gentle as a lamb at other times, and would patiently suffer any kind of freedoms from those he loved. He permitted the children of the house to lug him about, ride on his back, and use him as roughly as their little hands were capable of ; never, even when hurt, showing his displeasure further than by a low growl. He was extremely indulgent to all the other animals of his species in the yard ; and when abroad, would treat the impertinent barking of little dogs with silent con-

tempt. Once, indeed, being provoked beyond bearing, not only by the noise, but by the snaps of a malicious whelp, he suddenly seized him in his open mouth; but when the bystanders thought that the poor cur was going instantly to be devoured, they were equally surprised and diverted at seeing Indur go to the side of a muddy ditch, and drop his antagonist unhurt into the middle of it.

He had, however, more serious conflicts to sustain. He was accustomed to attend the servant on market days to the neighbouring town; when it was his office to guard the provision cart, while the man was making his purchases in the shops. On these occasions, the boldest dogs in the street would sometimes make an onset in a body; and while some of them were engaging Indur, others would be mounting the cart, and pulling down the meat baskets. Indur had much ado to defend himself and the provisions; however, he never failed to make some of the assailants pay dearly for their impudence; and by his loud barking, he summoned to his assistance his fellow-servant, who came in time to prevent their depredations.

### EXERCISE CXII.

At length his courage was exerted on the most important service to which it could be applied. His master, returning home at night, was attacked near his own house by three armed ruffians. Indur heard his voice calling for help, and instantly flew to his relief. He seized one of the villains by the throat, brought him to the ground, and presently disabled him. His master, in the mean time, was keeping off the other two with a large stick; but had received several wounds with a cutlass; and one of the men had presented a pistol, and was just on the point of firing. At this moment, Indur, leaving his vanquished foe on the ground, rushed forward, and seizing the man's arm, made him drop the pistol. The master took it up; on which the other robber fled. He now advanced to him with whom Indur was engaged, and fired the pistol at him. The ball broke the man's arm, and from thence entered the body of Indur, and mortally wounded him. He fell, but had the satisfaction of seeing his master remain lord of the field; and the servants now coming up, made prisoners of the two wounded robbers. The master threw himself by the side of Indur, and expressed the warmest concern at the accident



which had made him the cause of the death of the faithful animal that had preserved his life. Indur died licking his hand.

So generous a nature was now no longer to be annexed to a brutal form. Indur, awaking as it were from a dream, found himself again in the happy region he had formerly inhabited, and recommenced the innocent life of a Brahmin. He cherished the memory of his transmigrations, and handed them down to posterity, in a relation from whence the preceding account has been extracted.—*Parbault*.

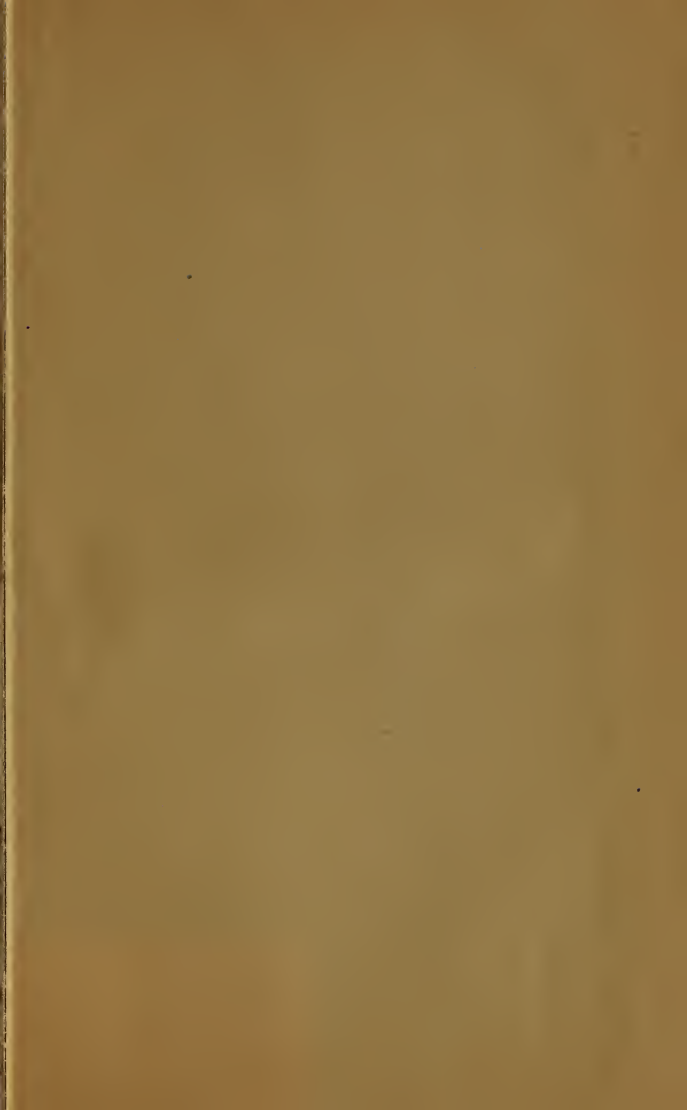
**THE END.**



LBJa 23







Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.  
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide  
Treatment Date: Sept. 2006

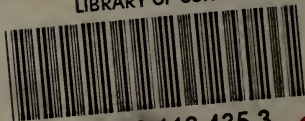
**PreservationTechnologies**

A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive  
Cranberry Township, PA 16066  
(724) 779-2111



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 003 113 435 3